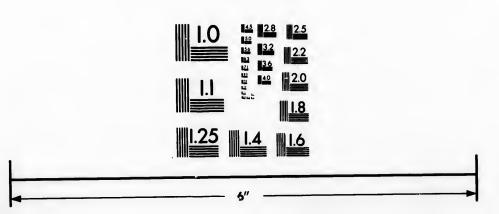


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

SIM SELECTION OF THE SE



CIHM/ICMH Microfiche Series. CIHM/ICMH Collection de microfiches.



Canadian Institute for Historical Microreproductions / Institut canadian de microreproductions historiques



(C) 1984

Technical and Bibliographic Notes/Notes techniques et bibliographiques

origi copy which repre	Institute has attemprial copy available for which may be bible to which may alter any of oduction, or which usual method of film. Coloured covers/ Couverture de couverture endom Covers restored an Couverture restaul Cover title missing Le titre de couverture. Coloured maps/ Cartes géographiq	or filming. Feature iographically unique the images in the may significantly on ing, are checked leur magée id/or laminated/ ide et/ou pelliculée i/ ure manque	s of this ue, change below.	qu'il de c poin une mod	Pages res	ossible daire qui sibliographroduite, cans la me ci-dessou pages/couleur maged/dommagestored anataurées de colorées, tached/	e se proc ont peut-é nique, qui ou qui peu éthode no s. ées d/or lamin et/ou pelli	urer. Las etre uniqui i peuvent uvent exig rmale de nated/ iculées or foxed/	détails ues du modifier ger une filmage
	Coloured ink (i.e.	other than blue or	black)/		Showthre	ough/			
Ш	Encre de couleur (\triangle	Transpare				
	Coloured plates an Planches et/ou illu		ur	\checkmark	Quality o Qualité in			ion	
	Bound with other material/ Relié avec d'autres documents				Includes supplementary material/ Comprend du matériel supplémentaire				
	Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/ Lare liure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la distortion le long de la marge intérieure Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/ Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.				Only edition available/ Seule édition disponible Pages wholly or partially obscured by errata slips, tissues, etc., have been refilmed to ensure the best possible image/ Les pages totalement ou partiellement obscurcies par un feuillet d'errata, une pelure, etc., ont été filmées à nouveau de façon à obtenir la meilleure image possible.				
	Additional comme Commentaires sup	16							
	item is filmed at th ocument est filmé a								
10X	14X	18	X	22X		26X		30X	
			<u> </u>						
	12X	16X	20X		24X		28X		32X

The t

The i possi of th filmi

Origi begin the lasion, other first sion, or ille

The I shall TINU whic

Maps differ entire begin right requi The copy filmed here has been reproduced thanks to the generosity of:

Library of the Public Archives of Canada

The images appearing here are the best quality possible considering the condition and legibility of the original copy and in keeping with the filming contract specifications.

Original copies in printed paper covers are filmed beginning with the front cover end ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression, or the back cover when appropriate. Ail other original copies are filmed beginning on the first page with a printed or illustrated impression, and ending on the last page with a printed or illustrated impression.

The last recorded frame on each microfiche shall contain the symbol → (meaning "CONTINUED"), or the symbol ▼ (meaning "END"), whichever applies.

Maps, plates, charts, etc., may be filmed at different reduction ratios. Those too large to be entirely included in one exposure are filmed beginning in the upper left hand corner, left to right and top to bottom, as many frames as required. The following diagrams illustrate the method:

L'exemplaire filmé fut reproduit grâce à la générosité de:

La bibliothèque des Archives publiques du Canada

Les images suivantes ont été reproduites avec le plus grand soin, compte tenu de la condition et de la netteté de l'exemplaire filmé, et en conformité avec les conditions du contrat de filmage.

Les exemplaires originaux dont la couverture en papier est imprimée sont filmés en commençant par le premier plat et en terminant soit par la dernière page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration, soit par le second plat, selon le cas. Tous les autres exemplaires originaux sont filmés en commençant par la première page qui comporte une empreinte d'impression ou d'illustration et en terminant par la dernière page qui comporte une telle empreinte.

Un des symboles suivants apparaîtra sur la dernière image de chaque microfiche, selon le cas: le symbole → signifie "A SUIVRE", le symbole ▼ signifie "FIN".

Les certes, planches, tableaux, etc., peuvent être filmés à des taux de réduction différents. Lorsque le document est trop grand pour être reproduit en un seul cliché, il est filmé à partir de l'angle supérieur gauche, de gauche à droite, et de haut en bas, en prenant le nombre d'images nécessaire. Les diagrammes suivants illustrent la méthode.

1	
2	
3	

1	2	3		
4	5	6		

errata to

pelure, n à

étails

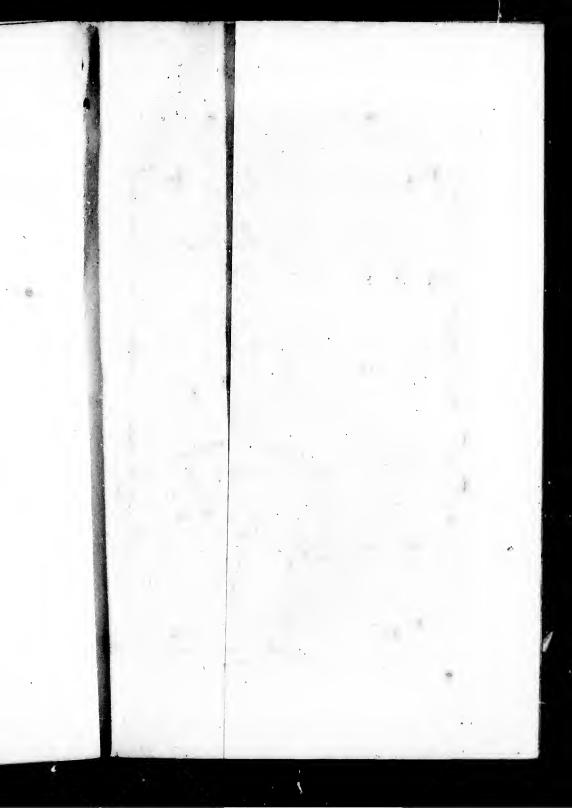
s du rodifier

r une

Image

32X

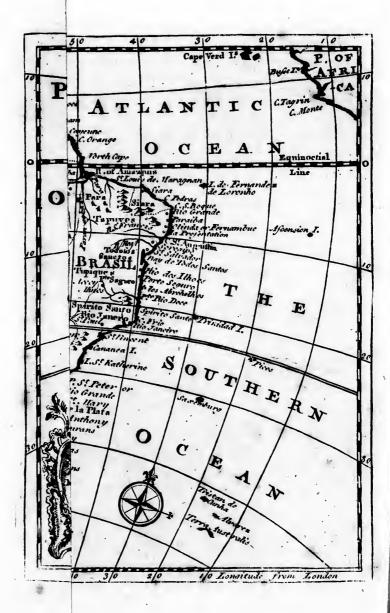








٢,



with the same

! lombally

ACCOUNT

OF THE

European Settlements

IN

AMERICA.

IN SIX PARTS.

I. A short History of the IIII. Of the Spanish Settle-Discovery of that Part of the World.

II. The Manners and Cuftoms of the original Inhabitants.

inents.

IV. Of the ortuguese. V. Of the French, Dutch, and Danish. VI. Of the English.

Each PART contains

An accurate Description of the Settlements in it, their Extent, Climate, Productions, Trade, Genius and Disposition of their Inhabitants: the Interests of the several Powers of Europe with respect to those Settlements; and their Political and Commercial Views with regard to each other.

VOL. II.

The Fourth Edition, with Improvements.

LONDON:

Printed for J. Dodsley, in Pall-Mall. MDCCLXV.

E 143 B95 1765 V.2

CONTENTS

Of the SECOND VOLUME.

PART V.

The French Settlements.

CHAP. I.

The time in which the French began their West-India settlements. Favoured by cardinal Richlieu. De Poincy governor. The West-India company. page 3

CHAP. II.

The destruction of the colony of St. Christopher's.

The rife of the buccaneers. The cause of their success. The settlement of Hispaniola.

The policy of France. A description of Hispaniola. Its trade. The towns of Cape Françoise and Leogane.

CHAP. III.

A description of Martinico. Of Guadaloupe and other French islands. Their produce. Observations on the mistakes that have been made about their value.

CHAP. IV.

French North America. Description of Canada. Its climate. The fair of Mont-A 2 Real.

CONTENTS.

iv

1 . . .

Real. Quebec. The inhabitants of Canada. The river St. Laurence and the great lakes. Cape Breton. 2

CHAP. V.

Louisiana. The Missippi. The Ohio. The fountain of youth. The colony of Louisiana.35

CHAP. VI.

The French policy with regard to their colonies.

CHAP. VII.

The Dutch settlements. Curassou. The city, its trade. The Spanish contraband. Eufatia. The Danish company. The Danish island of Santa Cruz. The characters of the several European nations as they regard America.

PART VI.

The English Settlements.

CHAP. I.

The division of the English West-Indies. Description of Jamaica. Conquest of that island,

CHAP. II.

The settlement of Jamaica. The failure of cacao. The buccaneers. The flourishing state of that island. Its decline in some respects.

CHAP. III.

The products of Jamaica. Piemento. Sugar. Rum. Molasses. Cotton. Ginger. The logwood trade. Disputes about it. The contraband. Slave trade.

CHAP. IV.

Port-Royal. The earthquake 1692. Kingfton. St. Jago de la Vega, or Spanish-town. Disputes about the removal of the seat of government.

CHAP. V.

Barbadoes. Its savage condition at the first planting. The hardships suffered by the planters. The speedy increase of the island. Its great wealth and number of inhabitants. Its decline. Present state of the island. 84

Deland,

be 5

es.

40

ity, Eu-

nish

rard

50

AP.

a 3 CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

St. Christopher, Antegua, Nevis, Montserrat; their present condition and force. 91

CHAP. VII.

Climate of the W.st-Indies. The rains and winds. Hurricanes. Their prognostics. Produce of the West-Indies. Sugar. The manner of manufacturing it. Planters in the West-Indies. Their way of life and management of their affairs. The Negroes. 94

CHAP. VIII.

Observations on the settlement of the West-Indies. Advantages there for tempers prejedicial at home. Bad tempers not always noxious in every sense.

CHAP. IX.

Observations on taxing the colonies. On an expensive establishment there. Objections answered.

CHAP. X.

State of the Negroes in the West-Indies. Danger from them. Methods proposed for remedying these

CONTENTS.

vii

these abuses. The necessity of increasing the Whites. Use of this regulation in trade.

CHAP. XI.

Misery of the Negroes. Great waste of them. Methods of preventing it. Instruction of Negroes in religion.

CHAP. XII.

1d 0–

72-

be

e-

94

ft-

ays

an.

110

ing bese Proposal for a sort of enfranchisement of Mulattoes and Negroes. Danger from the multitude of House-negroes. 130

PART VII.

British North America.

CHAP. I.

A general view of the English dominions in North America. 134

CHAP. II.

First attempts to settle North America. The rise and progress of the Puritans. They are persecuted by Laud. Several sty into New England.

CHAP. III.

Difference in religion, divides the colony. Massachuset. Connecticut. Providence. Spirit of persecution. Persecution of the Quakers. Disputes about grace.

CHAP. IV.

The Witchcraft delusion. Great cruelties. The madness ends in the accusation of the magistrates. Reslexions.

CHAP. V.

The situation, climate, &c. of New England.

Indian corn described. Cattle of New England.

162

CHAP. VI.

People of New England. Their numbers. Hiftory of the charters of the colonies here, and the forfeiture of some. 167

C H A P. VII.

Boston, its harbour. Trade. Ship-building. Distillery. Foreign trassic. Research on the scheme of limiting it. Declension of the trade of New England.

C H. A P. VIII.

New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania.

Description of their situation, &c. Short account of their settlement.

184

CHAP. IX.

16

be

if-55

nd. ig-

62

Tif-

and

67

ng:

on

the

Ϊ7Ι AP. City of New York. Its flourishing trade. Albany. The Indian trade there. The Iroquois or Five Nations.

CHAP. X.

New Jersey. Its trade; and inhabitants. 194

CHAP. XI.

Account of William Penn. The principles on which he fettled the colony. His death. 195

CHAP. XII.

Inhabitants of Pennsylvania. Variety of nations and religions there. Pacific principles of the Quakers. Reflexions on the present state of affairs there.

CHAP. XIII.

Description of Philadelphia. Its trade. Number of people in Pennsylvania. Its flourishing condition. Few Negroes there. 203

CHAP. XIV.

Situation, &c. of Virginia. Conveniency of its rivers for navigation. Beasts and birds of the country. The opossum. 206

CHAP. XV.

Towns in Virginia few and small. Tobacco, its cultivation. Trade in that and other commodities. People in Virginia. White and Black.

CHAP. XVI.

Attempts to settle Virginia, three unsuccessful.

Settled at last by lord Delawar. 217

CHAP. XVII.

Virginia holds out against Cromwell, and is reduced. Bacon's rebellion. Its causes. Bacon dies. Peace restored. 222

CHAP. XVIII.

Maryland. The time of settling it. Grant to lord Baltimore. Attempts of king James to deprive him of his jurisdiction. He is deprived of it on the revolution. He is restored. Capital of Maryland. Its trade and inhabitants:

CHAP. XIX.

Attempts of the French to settle Carolina. They are beat off by the Spaniards. 233

CHAP. XX.

Carolina is settled by the English. Its constitution. The lords proprietors resign their charter. Made a royal government, and divided into two provinces. 236

CHAP. XXI.

Situation, climate, &c. of Carolina. Its animal and vegetable productions. 241

CHAP. XXII.

The commodities of Carolina for export. Rice, indigo, pitch, and tar. Process in raising and manufacturing these commodities. 246

CHAP. XXIII.

North Carolina, some account of its settlement.

Bad state of that province. Is considerably improved. Chief town.

255

CHAP. XXIV.

An account of Charles-town. Port-Royal. The trade of Carolina. Its wast increase. Articles not sufficiently attended to there. 257 CHAP.

its of

its
mand
212

ful. 217

reacon 222

nt to
tes to
tepri=
tored.
inha226

226 A P.

CHAP. XXV.

Settlement of Georgia. Reasons for it. The plan of the settlement defective. Attempts to remedy it. 263

CHAP. XXVI.

Colony new modelled. Faults in the new conftitution. Trade of this province. 269

CHAP. XXVII.

Nova Scotia, the time and reasons of its settlement. French there. Climate and soil. Annapolis, Halifax, and Lunenburg. 273

CHAP. XXVIII.

The island of Newfoundland. The fishery there.

The Bermudas. Their settlement and trade.
The Bahamas. 280

C'HAP. XXIX.

Hudson's Bay. Attempts for the discovery of a North-West passage. The Hudson's bay company. Thoughts upon its trade. Climate and soil of the countries there. Conclusion. 285

CHAP. XXX.

The royal, proprietary, and charter governments. Laws of the colonies. Paper currency. Abuses in it. Another sort of money proposed.

AN

ACCOUNT

OF THE

EUROPEAN SETTLEMENTS

IN

A M E R I C A.

VOL. II.

to 63

fti-

tle-4n-273

ere. ade. 280

of a comand 285

erncurconey 296 AN

, .:

: 1 1000 A

-

อนแล้น.................สำนาจันเป็น

0.1

V. 3 1 64 ... V

11. . 10.



PART V.

The French Settlements:

CHAP. I.

The time in which the French began their West-India settlements. Favoured by cardinal Richlieu. De Poincy governor. The West-India company.



HE French were amongst the last nations who made settlements in the West-Indies; but they made ample amends by the vigour with which they pursued them, and by that chain of judi-

cious and admirable measures which they used in drawing from them every advantage that the nature of the climate would yield; and in contending against the difficulties which it threw in their way.

The civil wars which divided and harraffed that kingdom, from the death of Henry the fecond, with very little interruption, until the B 2 majority

majority of Lewis the fourteenth, withdrew the attention of both prince and people from their commercial interests to those of parties in religion and government. The politics of the house of Valois, though France perhaps was never governed by princes of fo ingenious and refined a turn, were wholly of the Machiavilian kind. They tended to distract, to unsettle, to try dangerous schemes, and to raise storms, only to display a skill in pilotage. The parties then in France folely contended what power could be given to or taken from the king, without confidering what could make their country a great kingdom. Therefore, which way foever the balance inclined, whether to the king or to the nobles, to the catholics or to the protestants, it was pretty indifferent to the real happiness of that nation. The parties only gamed out of a common stock. Neither could be enriched. But their diffensions made all of them poor and weak. The time of cardinal Richlieu must be confidered as the true æra of French policy. This great man, pacifying all at home, exalting the royal authority upon the ruins of the power of the nobility, and modelling that

great system of general policy in external affairs, which has raised France to such a pitch of greatness; amongst so many, and such extensive cares, did not forget those of commerce, and, what serves most effectually

W

m

ies

of

aps

ous

Ia-

, to

to

ige.

ded

rom

ould

ere-

ned,

the

retty

tion.

mon

their

veak.

con-

olicy.

exalt-

of the

that

ternal

uch a

, and

ose of

Aually

ta

to support commerce, colonies and establishments abroad. But the circumstances of the time, and his genius that embraced so many objects, did not leave him leisure to perfect what he began. It was reserved for that great, wise, and honest minister Colbert, one of the ablest that ever served any prince or honoured any country, to bring that plan to perfection, to carry it in a great measure into execution, and to leave things in such order, that it was not difficult, when savourable circumstances offered, to make France one of the first trading powers in Europe, and her colonies the most powerful, their nature confidered, of any in America.

So early as the reign of Francis I. the French attempted an establishment in North-America; but it was not until the year 1625, that they made their first settlement in the This was upon St. Christopher, West-Indies. one of the Caribbee islands. A remarkable circumstance attended it; the English took possession of the island the same day. this fettlement had not long life on either fide. The Spaniards had reason to dread the establishment of such powers in their neighbourhood; and they envied the French and English those advantages it was foreseen they would draw from countries from which they had themselves no benefit, and which they

claimed only to keep them defarts.

B 3

They

They assaulted these new colonies, and drove them out of the island. The English colony soon returned, and possessed themselves of the largest and most fertile quarter, before the French could collect themselves; who, finding the English already occupied the best part, left a small colony on the other. But their chief, and the most adventurous of their inhabitants, went in search of a new settlement; when, after various fortune, and after combating the difficulties which an uncultivated country and some indiscretions of their own had caused them, they made a considerable settlement in the islands of Martinico and Guadaloupe.

Cardinal Richlieu faw very early into the advantages which might arise from these settlements, if prudently managed; and he thought the most prudent management both for securing and extending them, consisted in but one article; which was, to put the government into proper hands. With that view he made choice of Monsieur de Poincy, a knight of Malta; who was fent thither with the title of governor and lieutenant-general of the illesof America, and a very ample commission. No person could be better fitted to rectify the diforders that naturally must arise in every new settlement, and to put things in a right channel for the time to come. Of a good family; of an unblemished reputation for probity ; ifh ore ho, best But heir tlefter ulti→ heir derinico o the ught or sen but vernw he night e title e isles iffion. fy the every right good n for obity ;

ind

probity; of great reading; of much and various knowledge of life; and of a genius as variously exercised. He was a master in mechanical learning; in which he excelled not more to his own honour, than to the benefit of the colonies which had the happiness to be committed to his care. He it was that first taught them the method of cultivating the fugar cane, and preparing the fugar. improved the methods which were used in the Brazils for this purpose, both with regard to the mills and the furnaces; and having given a direction to their industry, he gave it all the encouragement he could, by supporting those who raised their own substance, by the means which advanced the colony; whilst he kept a watchful eye and a severe hand upon all, who were for making hasty fortunes, without adding to the public stock. made admirable regulations for the speedy and impartial administration of justice; and knowing that all order must depend for its bleffing above, and its effect here upon an attention to religion, he appointed a proper number of churches to be built in all the islands under his care, and settled priests in them, with a competent, but not a superfluous provision; but he did not think monasteries and monks fo compatible with a new colony, Under the inspection of this governor,

Martinico, Guadaloupe, part of St. Christo-

thority.

These islands, however, were unhappily under the superintendance of an exclusive company, which, in spite of all that could otherwise be done, especially after the death of Richlieu, fo neglected, or misinanaged their affairs, that they were obliged to fell a part of the settlements; and they lest the rest hardly worth purchasing. But the government at length bought up the islands which they had alienated, and rescued the others out of their hands. The trade under proper regulations was laid open, yet protected under the wings of their great India company. These regulations took place about 1680, and the benefits of this arrangement were great, and foon apparent. Exclusive companies may probably be useful to nourish an infant trade. They may be useful too for a very distant one, where the market is to be nicely managed, and where it is under the dominion of foreign and barbarous princes. But where the trade is between different parts of the dominions of the same prince, under the protection of his laws, carried on by his own subjects, and with

out render hese the

and may ade. one, ged, eign

rado ns of his and

with

with goods wrought in his own country, such companies must be equally absurd in their nature, and ruinous in their contequences to the trade.

CHAP. II.

The destruction of the colony of St. Christopher's.

The rife of the buccaneers. The cause of their success. The settlement of Hispaniola.

The policy of France. A description of Hispaniola. Its trade. The towns of Cape Francoise and Leogane.

first colony at St. Christopher's, they brought upon themselves by this act a very heavy revenge for the injustice of it. Their example at the same time made it apparent, how much better it is to let a bold and adventurous people settle in some place where they can do but little mischief, and to suffer their spirit to evaporate in peaceful occupations, rather than to keep it up by difficulties, unable to quell it, but which may force it to take another and more dangerous turn.

Several of the French inhabitants, who were expelled from St. Christopher's, being reduced to great indigence, began to think of desperate courses. They betook themselves to piracy; and uniting with some vagrant English, Dutch, and other outcasts of all nations, but resolute

fellows,

fellows, and not destitute of men of capacity amongst them, they began a piratical war upon the Spaniards. At first they satisfied themselves with taking their ships and de-Aroying their trade; which they did effectually; but foon, encouraged and strengthened by this success, they landed upon the continent of New-Spain and Terra Firma, burning and plundering the open country. boldness and number increasing with their fuccess, they affaulted and took some of their strongest fortresses and most opulent towns. They took Portobello, Campeachy, Maracaibo, Gibraltar, and the fortress of Chagra; they even took the city of Panama by storm, and burned it, after defeating an army which came to beat them off. In all which places, and in the others which they had taken, they gained an incredible booty, and committed the most unheard-of cruelties. Another party of these pirates passed the streights of Magellan, and entering into the South-Sea, turned the whole coast of Peru, Chili, and the East of Mexico, into one scene of desolation; every where attended with success, because every where acting with a bravery and conduct, that in any other cause had merited the highest honours.

It is not a little furprising, at first view, that all the great things which were done in this new world, were either done by actual pirates, ty

ar

æd

e-

u-

 ed

i

ng

eir

eir

eir

ns.

ai-

ra s

m,

ich

es,

ney

ted

rty

ccl-

ned

the

on;

on-

the

that

this

ites,

as

as these men were, or by private adventurers, but one degree better authorized, and nothing better supported; whose own courage and skill were to be at once their commission, their magazines, and their treasury; being obliged to find the resources of the war, in the war itself. When the most numerous and the best provided armaments have shamefully failed, and failed in those very places, where the adventurers had shewn them such a glorious example of success. But the cause is not so hard to be affigned. None but men of great enterprise and bravery conceive those expeditions of themselves. Unsupported, but at the same time unchecked by the higher powers, they were under the necessity of turning to every fide, and of exerting every faculty. But then they had nothing to hinder this exertion. Their first attempts were generally low, and therefore they were prosperous. They did not lead great armies to be subsisted with great difficulty, and to be discouraged and wasted by the hardships of the climate; but they habituated themselves to hardships by degrees: they were encouraged by imaller fucceffes; and having nothing to expect from their power and numbers, they made amends by their vigilance, their activity, and their courage. These are causes adequate to the effect; indeed adequate to any effect. Whereas in the regular way, a general of the first note

greatly infifted upon.

The pirates, whom we called buccaneers improperly, the French denominated flibustiers, from the Dutch flyboats, in which they made their first expeditions. The buccaneers are no more than persons who hunt wild cattle in America for their hides and tallow. Some of these joined the flibustiers in their first expeditions; and from them we named the whole body, buccaneers. These people brought their prizes and plunder frequently into Jamaica, by which they enriched that island extremely. Others, finding that the Spaniards were very weak in Hispaniola, and that they had in a manner deserted a considerable part of the island, made it a place of rendezvous. They who hunted cattle faw the hideous defarts left by the Spanish tyranny, a proper place for exercifing their profeffion. To these two forts of people were soon added

to

n;

nd

in-

ene

in-

nd,

in

ins

too

be

eers

ouf-

hey

eers

vild

ow.

heir

med

ople

ntly

that

the

and

fide-

ce of

faw

yran-

ofef-

foon

added

added a third, who were some of the French in the Lesser Antilles; who, finding how much might be made by supplying a fort of people who expended largely, and were not very exact in their bargains, and perceiving that no part of America afforded a better soil, passed over to this island, and exercised here their business of planters and merchants. These three sorts of people, mutually in want of each other, lived in very good harmony. The Spaniards dislodged them several times; but they still returned, and with new strength; so that it was with difficulty, and after a long dispute, that the Spaniards were able to retain one part of the island.

The court of France saw the progress of these people filently. Whenever complaints were made, they disavowed their proceedings; resolved not to break measures with Spain for the fake of an object, which they were not fure they could hold, and the advantages of which were yet doubtful; but when they found the French in Hispaniola numerous, strong, and wealthy, they owned them as subjects, sent them a governor and regular forces to keep them so, and to defend them in what they had done: the old method of piracy was still connived at, whilst the trade. of skins increased, and the plantations extend-At last the French obtained a legal right by the cession, which the Spaniards made.

14 An Account of the European

made them of the North-West part of the island by the treaty of Ryswick, in 1697; the best and most fertile part of the best and most fertile island in the West-Indies, and perhaps in the world; that which was the first fettled, and the whole of which is upwards of four hundred miles long, and one hundred and forty broad. This is the principal settlement of the French in the West-Indies, and indeed in all America. The country is mixed; pretty mountainous in some parts, but many of these mountains are fertile, and covered with beautiful woods. Others, which are barren and rocky, anciently had mines of gold; they are not worked now, though it is judged they not only contain those of gold, but mines of filver, copper, and iron. But the French think, and I believe with reason, that their labour is better bestowed on the culture of the plains for these rich commodities, which vend so well in Europe, than in the pursuit of mines, really more precarious in their profits, and which yield a wealth after all, of a less useful kind.

This country has likewise prodigiously fine plains, of a vast extent, and extreme fertility; either covered with noble and beautiful forests of timber and fruit-trees, excellent in their kinds, or pastured by vast numbers of horned cattle, sheep, and hogs. The air in Hispaniola is the most healthy in the West-Indies. The country is admirably watered with

rivulets

r

nt

b:

1;

ny

ed

LT-

d;

ged

nes

ich

eir

the

end

hes,

ich

fine

ity;

rests

heir

rned

niola

dies.

with

ulets

hd.

rivulets as well as navigable rivers. It is no wonder therefore, that this active and induftrious nation, in possession of so excellent and extensive a country, has reaped from it pro+ digious advantages. They were the better enabled to do this, from the great encouragement their settlements met with in France; and from the wife regulations which were made concerning them. These we shall con+ fider in their place. But it is certain they reckoned in the year 1726, that on this island they had no less than one hundred thousand negroes, and thirty thousand whites; that they made fixty thousand hogsheads of fugar of five hundred weight each; that the indigo was half as much in value as the fugar; that they exported large quantities of cotton; and that they had fent besides to France cacao and ginger in tolerable plenty. Since that time they had raifed coffee here to a very great amount. And not this article only, but every other branch of their commercial products has increased to a degree truly astonish+ ing fince that period. Towards the conclusion of the late war, a Spanish writer of great judgment, and well informed, reckons the produce of the plantations near Cape St. Françoise, the capital of French Hispaniola, and which were exported from that fingle town, at 30,000 tons in fugar, indigo, tobacco, and coffee. This export at the lowest possible calculation cannot

cannot be of less value than 600,000 pounds sterling. If to this we add the exports of the two confiderable ports of Leogane and Petit Guaves, and the other inferior ones, which certainly do not fend out less than the capital; or this low estimation, we find the exported produce of this island to be worth 1,200,000l. annually; which, great as it is, is certainly under-rated. But there is another branch of their trade, if possible, more advantagious to the mother country, the contraband which they carry on with the Spaniards, wholly in the manufactures of France, and for which they receive their returns in filver. The abovementioned author from the most authentic information tells us, that this trade returns annually to France no less than two millions of dollars. This progress of the French colonies, and their flourishing state after a war in which they fuffered greatly, I have displayed, in order to explode a notion which prevails with many; that, by diffreffing the French in time of war, it is in our power entirely to destroy their commerce; but this notion, if it should prevail generally, may missead us greatly to our disadvantage.

Nations like France and England, full of people of spirit and of industry, easily recover all the losses of war. The trade of France was in a deplorable condition at the treaty of Utrecht. She had not then five hundred vessels of all

forts

ds he tit ch al; ted ol. nly of to iich y in nich The aurade two the state tly, I otion

f peover all as in a recht. of all forts

effing

t this

may

forts in the world. At the beginning of the last war, but thirty years after, they had eighteen hundred. Their losses in that war were very great; and yet their losses in this shew, that in a very little time they have more than repaired them. Wherever the vital principle subfifts in full vigour, wounds are foon healed. Disorders themselves are a species of remedies; and every new loss not only shews how it may be repaired, but, by the vigour it inspires, makes new advantages known. Such loffes renew the spirit of industry and enterprise; they reduce things to their first principles; they keep alive motion, and make the appetites of traders sharp and While the spirit of trade subsists, trade itself can never be destroyed. This is the reason that, amidst their continual wars and the losses all the nations of Europe suffer from each other, they are almost all thriving. And, if I may indulge a conjecture, it may be one among several of the causes which have reduced the trade of Holland, that, fince the treaty of Utrecht, now above forty years, they have had no war. They may, during the quarrels of other powers, appear to have derived great advantages from their neutrality. But are they not with all this declining fast? And is not this country, which grew to be a nation, and to be a powerful, trading, and rich nation, in the midst of the most bloody and expensive Vol. II.

wars,

wars, now losing its trade, its riches, and its power, and almost ceasing to be a nation, in the midst of a prosound peace of upwards of forty years? We must not forget, what the great Colbert said of his country, and which we have experienced to be true, that the industry of the French, if permitted, would turn the very rocks into gold. We must not therefore place our dependence for keeping ourselves on a par of power with France, upon the prejudice which we can do its trade in time of war, but upon the vigour, economy, and wisdom of the measures which we take to secure and advance our own, both in war and in peace.

The largest town in the French part of Hispaniola is Cape Françoise, which is situated on the Northern part of the island upon a very sine harbour. It is well built, and contains about eight thousand inhabitants, blacks and whites. But though this be the largest town, Leogane on the Western side, a good port too, and a place of considerable trade, is the seat of government, which here resides in the hands of a governor and the intendant, who are mutually a check upon each other. There are besides two other towns, considerable for their trade, Petit Guaves on the West end of the island, and Port Louis on

the South-West part.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

A description of Martinico. Of Guadaloupe and other French islands. Their produce. Observations on the mistakes that have been made about their value.

MARTINICO is the next island in importance, which the French possess in America. It is one of the Caribbees or Windward islands, and the principal of them; about fixty miles in length, and at a medium about half as much in breadth. It is forty leagues to the North-West of Barbadoes. It has pretty high hills, especially in the inland parts. From those hills are poured out upon every side a number of agreeable and useful rivulets, which adorn and fructify this island in a high degree. The bays and harbours are numerous, fafe, and commodious; and fo well fortified, that we have always failed in our attempts upon this place. The foil is fruitful enough, abounding in the fame things which our islands in that part of the world produce, and upon which I shall the less infift on that account. Sugar is here, as it is in all the islands, the principal commodity, and great quantities are here made. Their export cannot be less than fixty or feventy thousand hogsheads, of five or fix hundred weight, annually, and this C 2

IAP.

its

in of

he

ich

in-

urn not

ing

pon

in

my,

e to

and

rt of

fitu-

upon

and

tants,

be the

ide, a

erable

h here

he in-

n each

owns,

ves on

büis on

certainly is no extravagant estimation. Indigo, cotton, piemento or allspice, ginger, and aloes, are raised here; and coffee in great abundance; but to what value I cannot exactly say. Martinico is the residence of the governor of the French islands in these seas.

Guadaloupe is the largest of all the Caribbees, and in that division called the Leeward islands. It is almost cut in two by a deep gulph that closes the side of a narrow isthmus, which connects the two peninsulas that compose this island. It is upwards of sixty miles long, and about the same breadth. Its soil is not inferior to that of Martinico; it is equally cultivated; and it is fortissed with equal strength; its produce is the same with that of Martinico; its export of sugar is as great, besides indigo, cotton, and those other commodities, which are produced in all the islands of that part of America called the West-Indies.

The rest of the French islands in those seas are Desiada, St. Bartholomew, and Marigalante; all of them inconsiderable in comparison of those which we have mentioned. They do not all together produce above seven or eight thousand hogsheads of sugar. As for the island of St. Vincent, it is in the possession of the native Americans, and of runaway negroes from the rest of the Caribbees. The French maintain them in this possession. Santa Lucia.

Lucia, or, as it is often called, Saint Alouzie, of which the French are themselves in possesfion, and have fettled, contrary to the faith of treaties, it is impossible to fay any thing of its produce; it has been so newly planted, that it cannot as yet yield a great deal, and it is, even in our present circumstances, much our fault if it ever yields a great deal to France. These islands, besides-their staple commodities, fend home rocou, and brazil wood, in confiderable quantities, for the use of dyers, cassia for the druggists, and rosewood for joiners. The French have a fettlement upon an island on the coast of Terra Firma in the province of Guiana, which they call Caen; and they claim besides a considerable part of the adjacent continent, but they have not much extended their fettlements that way. The island is excessively unhealthy, though not so bad as formerly. The French here raise the same commodities which they have from the Caribbee islands, and in no inconsiderable quantity.

In estimating the produce of these islands, it is not in my power to be very exact. I have made the best inquires I could, and principally took care not to exaggerate. I have, indeed, made the produce of the Caribbee islands very much greater than the ingenious collector of Harris's voyages; but then I am the less fearful of differing from him, as

C 3

he

away The Santa ucia,

go,

es,

lay.

r of

·ib-

ard

llph

iich

onle

not

ally

qual

that

reat,

om-

ands

Test-

hose

Iari-

com-

bned.

leven

s for

flion

he feems a little to differ from himself, and not to have confidered this point with his usual attention; for of Martinico he fays, "That, as it is larger, so it has many more inhabitants than Barbadoes, and produces more fugars, &c." And speaking of Guadaloupe, a little lower, he observes, "That it produces more fugars than any of the British islands, except Jamaica;" and yet afterwards, coming to fum up the products of all these islands, he allows but fifteen thousand hogsheads of sugar, of about fix hundred weight each, for the whole; when he makes the fingle island of Barbadoes to yield double the quantity of fugars which Martinico, Guadaloupe, and all the French Caribbees put together produce. For he rates it in the year 1730, at twenty-two thousand hogsheads, and upwards, of thirteen hundred weight. He must therefore certainly have made some mistake, excufable enough in fo vast a work, which is executed in general in a very mafterly manner.

On the whole, from the best informations I can get, the French at present greatly exceed our islands in the quantity of sugars which they produce; and it is as certain, that they are far less on the decline in that trade than we are, at least as things stood before the war; that they cultivate great quantities of indigo; a trade which our colonies in the West-Indies have entirely

not

ual

hat,

nts

ars,

ttle

ore

cept

to

, he

gar,

the

d of

v of

and

pro-

o, at

ards,

rere-

ex-

hich

sterly

ons I

xceed

vhich

ey are

e are,

itirely

that

entirely lost; that within these few years they have fent to Europe abundance of coffee, which our islands have not sufficient encouragment to raise; and that, upon the whole, we have the greatest reason to be jealous of France in that part of the world. What advantages they derive from the noble island of Hispaniola we have feen. What must they do, if they come to posfess the whole of that island, which in the cutting and shuffling of a treaty of peace is no way impossible? We shall then change the indolent Spaniard for the neighbourhood of the lively, vigilant, and enterprising French. And what a rivalry in peace, and what a danger in war, that neighbourhood is even now, and much more will probably be, is but too apparent. Jamaica is near it; and, for so valuable a posfession in so dangerous a situation, perhaps not fo well defended. If, besides this, the French should retain the islands of St. Vincent, St. Lucia, and Tobago, though they should only turn them into Plantations for fire-wood, lumber, and provisions, as in such a case it would feem most adviseable to do with some of them at least, what an advantage to their colonies! what an annoyance to ours! which they in a manner furround, and can in a fort hold befieged by the private armaments they may from thence fit out!

These last mentioned islands were left neutral at the last peace; or, in other words, they were

left at the extinction of the old, in just the order proper for kindling a new flame (though fuch a defign, I am convinced, was far from the intentions of one of the parties) and in all respects as if things were expresly ordered for that very purpose. Indeed nothing can be attended with worse consequences than these political after-reckonings, which the party who has the advantage at making the peace never finds it his account to fettle or adjust; but there they lie, full of matter of litigation; full of idle occasions for formal business; full of strife and of ill blood; and, when a proper time occurs, of bloody and expensive wars. It were better, at any rate, all at once to know what we are to depend upon; the best or the worst we have to expect. If, on the conclusion of a peace, things should take for us such an unfortunate turn, we have still great resources in the territories we posses. Jamaica is nothing like fully cultivated. The Bahamas, our undisputed right, where it is highly probable fugars might be cultivated to advantage, remain at present utterly neglected, as if unworthy of all notice, though they are many in number, large in extent, fruitful in their foil, fituated in a very happy climate, and are in a manner the keys of the West-India navigation. But we shall pass by all reflexions on this subject for the present, to look at the possessions and claims of France upon the

the continent; which, if they were as well cultivated as they are fruitful and extensive, or as convenient objects of the French industry as their islands, they would, I make no doubt, be at least as advantageous to the trade, and add as much to the wealth and power, of that flourishing kingdom.

CHAP. IV.

French North America. Description of Canada. Its climate. The fair of Mont-Real. Quebec. The inhabitants of Canada. The river St. Laurence and the great lakes. Cape Breton.

HE French possessions and claims in North America confift of an immense inland country, communicating with the fea by the mouths of two great rivers; both of difficult and dangerous navigation at the entrance; and one of which is quite frozen for almost half the year, and covered with thick exhalations and fogs for the greater part of the rest. They divide this vast country, which has our colonies on the East and North-East, the Spanish on the South-West and South-East, and to the Westward that unknown tract of land which stretches to the South-Sea, into two great provinces; the Northern of which they call Canada, and the Southern

rder
fuch
the
n all
for
be
thefe

eace just; ion;

full oper . It now

r the ufion the ances no-

, our bable , reunmany

their d are navixions ok at

upon the Southern Louisiana. But how far the bounds of these countries, extended to dimensions almost as great as all Europe by the ambition of France, ought to be contracted by the rights of other powers, I shall not undertake to determine; as, after all, such questions must be decided in a manner altogether different

from any thing that can be faid here.

Canada, which borders upon our provinces of Nova-Scotia, New-England, and New-York, is of a climate not altogether different from theirs; but, as it is much further from the sea, and more Northerly than a great part of those provinces, it has a much feverer winter; though the air is generally clear., The foil is various; mostly barren; but the French have fettlements where the land is equal in goodness to that in any of our colonies, and wants nothing but a better convenience of market to make it equally advantageous to the proprietors. It yields Indian corn very well in most parts, and very fine wheat in some. All sorts of garden stuff which grows in Europe flourishes here. they raise no staple commodity to answer their demands upon Old France; their trade with the Indians produces all their returns for that market. They are the furs of the beaver principally, and those of foxes and racoons, with deer-skins, and all the branches of the peltry. These, with what corn and lumber they send

to the West-Indies, to a people not very luxurious nor extremely numerous, furnish, though very little money, yet wherewithall, in a plentiful country, to render life easy and agreeable.

The nature of the climate feverely cold for the most part, and the people manufacturing nothing, shews what the country wants from Europe; wine, brandy, cloths, chiefly coarse, linen, and wrought iron. The Indian trade requires brandy, tobacco, a fort of dustil blankets, guns, powder and ball, kettles, hatchets, and tomahawks, with feveral toys and trinkets. The Indians supply the peltry, and the French have traders, whom they call coureurs de bois, who, in the manner of the original inhabitants, traverfing the vast lakes and rivers that divide this country, in canoes of bark, with incredible industry and patience, carry their goods into the remotest parts of America, and amongst nations entirely unknown to us. This again brings the market home to them, as the Indians are hereby habituated to trade with them. For this purpose, people from all parts, even from the distance of a thousand miles, come to the French fair of Mont-Real, which is held in On this occasion many solemnities are observed; guards are placed, and the governor assists, to preserve order in such a concourse of fo great a variety of favage nations. The trade is now in that channel, for though many, if

ds

ıl-

on

he

kė

ust

ent

ces W-

er-

ner

1 a

ıch

ally

but

and

CO-

ve-

anlian

fine

ltuff

But

heir

vith

that

rin-

with

ltry.

fend

to

not most of these nations, actually pass by our fettlement of Albany in New-York, where they may have the goods they want cheaper confiderably than at Mont-Real, they travel on above two hundred miles further, to buy the same commodities at the second hand, and enhanced by the expence of fo long a land carriage, at the French fair. For the French find it cheaper to buy our goods from the New-York merchants than to have them from their own, after so bad and so tedious a passage as it is from the mouth of the river St. Laurence to Mont-Real. So much do the French exceed us in industry, economy, and the arts of conciliating the affections of mankind; things that even balance all the disadvantages they naturally labour under in this country! Our fort of Oswego was well planned for fecuring the Indian trade, and actually brought us a great part of it. But it is now no longer an interruption to the French commerce.

Having mentioned Mont-Real, I have only to observe, that this town is situated in an island in the river St. Laurence. This island lies in a very savourable climate, and is well inhabited and well planted. The city, which is sometimes called Mont-Real, sometimes Ville Marie, is agreeably situated on a branch of the river St. Laurence; it forms an oblong square, divided by regular and well-cut streets;

it contains three convents, with handsome churches, and an hospital for the sick. The fortifications are pretty good. The inhabitants are said to be about five thousand. The river is only navigable hither by canoes, or small craft, having several falls between this town and Quebec. Yet the Indian sair, and the trade of the same kind which they drive more or less for the whole year, make it no

inconfiderable place.

by

rk,

ant

ney

, to

nd,

ig a

the

rom

nem

us a

iver

do

my,

as of

the

r in

well

and

ut it

ench

only

n an

fland

yhich

times

ranch

blong

reets;

well

Quebec, the capital, lies much nearer to the sea; from which, however, it is one hundred and fifty leagues distant. The river, which from the fea hither is ten or twelve miles broad, narrows all of a fudden to about a mile wide. The town is divided into an upper and a lower; the houses in both are of stone. and in a tolerable manner. The fortifications are strong, though not regular; but its situation on a rock, washed by the river St. Laurence, is its chief defence. The city is a bishopric; but the cathedral is mean, and unworthy the capital of New-France. episcopal palace is however a building of a good appearance. Here is likewise a college of Jesuits, not inelegant; two convents and two hospitals. The town is covered with a regular and beautiful citadel, in which the governor refides. The city, though the capital of Canada, is however not very large. contains about feven or eight thousand inhabitants at the utmost. Ships of the greatest burthen load and unload here, and a good

many are built.

From Quebec to Mont-Real, which is about one hundred and fifty miles distance, the country on both fides the river is very well fettled, and has an agreeable effect upon the eye. The farms lie pretty close all the way; feveral gentlemen's houses, neatly built, shew themselves at intervals; and there is all the appearance of a flourishing colony; but there are no towns or villages. It is pretty much like the well-fettled parts of our colonies of Virginia and Maryland, where the planters

are wholly within themselves.

With all the attention of the court of France to the trade and peopling of this, as well as their other colonies on the continent, they have not been yet able thoroughly to overcome the consequences of those difficulties which the climate, whilst the place was unfettled, threw in their way; their losses in the wars with that brave and fierce nation the Iroquois, who more than once reduced their colony to the last extremity, and the bad navigation of the river St. Laurence, which is an evil incurable, have kept back the colony. Therefore, though it is the oldest of all the French establishments, and prior to our settlement of New-England, the inhabitants are not above one hundred thousand souls. Some indeed

od is e, ell he y; ew the ere ichof ters nce l as hey verlties unthe the heir bad ch is ony. the fets are ome

deed

indeed of late reckon them but at forty thou-An error that is very prejudicial to our affairs, whilst we overvalued our own strength and under-rated the force of the enemy, and acted in a good measure in conformity to such ideas; but even this number, as I estimate it, whic' I believe is not far from the reality, might be no just cause of dread to our colonies, if they managed the strength they have, which is certainly much superior, with skill and effect. The French from theirs. though inferior, have seven or eight thousand militia, hardy and well disciplined, always in readiness to co-operate with their regular troops; and there is nothing which may hinder or retard their operations from within themselves. It is therefore not more the French intrigues and their intermarriages with the Indians, which fix that people in the French interest, than the succours which they are always fure to have from fuch a force, ever in readiness to protect them whilst they remain their friends, or to punish them whenever they dare to appear as enemies. With us the case is quite otherwise. This savage people commence hostilities against us without any previous notice; and often, without any provocation, they commit the most horrid ravages for a long time-with impunity. But when at last their barbarities have roused the fleeping strength of our people, at the same

The great river St. Laurence is that only upon which the French have fettlements of any note; but if we look forward into futurity, it is nothing improbable that this vast country, whoever then shall be the possessors of it, will be enabled of itself to carry on a vast trade upon these great seas of fresh water which it environs. Here are five lakes, the finallest of which is a piece of sweet water greater than any in the other parts of the world; this is the lake Ontario, which is not less than two hundred leagues in circumference; Erie, longer but not so broad, is about the same extent. That of the Hurons fpreads greatly in width, and is in circumference not less than three hundred; as is that of Michigan, though, like lake Erie, it is rather long and comparatively narrow. But the lake Superior, which contains several large islands, is five hundred leagues in the circuit. All of these are navigable by any vessels, and they all communicate with one another, exed

ey

0-

nd

ch

ce,

ıg-

ing

nly

of

ıtu-

vast

fors

rater

, the

vater

the

not

um-

d, is

irons

nfer-

that

it is

But

large

rcuit.

, and

r, ex-

cept

cept that the passage between Erie and Ontario is interrupted by the stupendous cataract of Niagara, where the water tumbles down a precipice of twenty-fix fathom high, and makes in this fall a thundring noise, which is heard all round the country at the distance of several miles. The river St. Laurence is the outlet of these lakes; by this they discharge themfelves into the ocean. The French have built forts at the feveral straits, by which these lakes communicate with each other, as well as where the last of them communicates with the river By these they effectually secure St. Laurence. to themselves the trade of the lakes, and an influence upon all the nations of Americans which confine upon them.

They have but one settlement more in the Northern part of their territories in America, which deserves consideration; but that settlement, though a small one, is perhaps of more consequence than all the rest. It is the island of Cape Breton. This island properly belongs to the division of Acadia or Nova-Scotia, and it is the only part of it which has not been ceded by treaty to Great Britain. It is about one hundred and forty miles in length, full of mountains and lakes, and intersected by a vast number of creeks and bays, almost meeting each other on every side; which seems in general, both for the coast and inland, very much to resemble the coast and inland parts of

Vol. II. D most

most Northern countries. Scotland is so; so is Iceland; and Denmark and Sweden have fuch shores, such mountains, and such lakes. However, the foil is in many places sufficiently fruitful; and in every part abounds with timber fit for all uses. In the earth are coalpits; and on the shores one of the most valuable fisheries in the world. The only town in this island is Louisbourg. It stands upon one of the finest harbours in all America. This harbour is four leagues in circumference, landlocked every way but at the mouth, which is narrow; and within there is fine anchorage every where in feven fathom water. town itself is of a tolerable fize, and well built and fortified. The harbour is defended by batteries of cannon and forts, which fecure it at this day, perhaps too effectually. This harbour is open the whole year. The French ships that carry goods to Quebec can very feldom get their full loading there; therefore on their return they put into Louisbourg, and there take in a quantity of fish, coal, and fome lumber, and then fail away to the French islands in the West-Indies, where they vend these, and soon compleat their cargo with fugars. It is needless to observe that this island was taken by us in the late war, but restored by the treaty of Aix la Chapelle, in which we certainly were not in fuch a condition as to entitle us to prescribe the terms. CHAP.

CHAP. V.

kes. ent-

vith

oalalu-

own

ipon

rica.

ence,

hich

orage

The

well

ended

ecure

This

rench

very

efore

, and

, and

o the

e they

cargo

e that

war,

lle, in

tondi-

HAP.

ms.

Louisiana. The Missippi. The Ohio. The fountain of youth. The colony of Louisiana.

THE French have called the South part of the vast tract which they claim in America, Louisiana. It was heretofore a part of Florida. It is bounded by the gulph of Mexico upon the South. But what bounds it is to have to the East and to the West, it is to be wished the next treaty of peace may settle definitely. This is in all respects a much finer country than Canada; in a delicious climate, capable of bearing almost any thing from the temper of the sky, and the goodness of the foil, and from the multitude of long, deep, and beautiful rivers, with which it is every where enriched and adorned; these are most of them navigable for hundreds of miles into the country. They are principally the Missisppi, whose head is unknown, but it almost goes quite through North America, and at certain feafons overflows its banks for a vast way on both sides. The Ohio, a river almost equal to the Danube, which falls into the Missisppi; the Ouabache, scarce inferior to the Ohio; the great rivers, Alibama, Mobile, and several others. The face of the D 2 country country is almost wholly plain, covered with stately woods, or spread into very fine meadows. In short, Louisiana, particularly the Northern part (for the mouth of the Missippi is barren), without any of those heightenings which it received, when it was made the instrument to captivate so many to their ruin, is in all respects a most desirable place; though there are no sufficient reasons to believe that it contains any rich metals, which gave it the greatest influence in that remarkable de-

lusion in 1717.

I know not how it has happened, but it has been the fate of this country to create romantic ideas at all times. Very furprifing stories were told of it when first the Spaniards difcovered the West-India islands. Amongst others, a notion was generally current, that there was a fountain here which perpetually renewed the youth of those who drank it. This was so uniformly and confidently affirmed, that Juan Pontio de Leon, a considerable man among the Spanish adventurers, gave credit to it, and made a particular expedition. for the discovery of that fairy land, and that fountain of youth. He was the first of the Europeans who landed in Florida. But what fuccess soever he met with in search for that celebrated spring, it is certain he died not long after, having fearched every part of the country, and drank of almost every water it contained.

ith

ca-

the

iade

heir

ice;

ieve

ve it

: has

nan-

ories

dif-

ngst

that

ually

k it.

irm-

rable

gave

ition

that

f the

what

that

not

f the

ned.

de- '

Nor do I find that so invaluable contained. a spring is yet discovered there; if it were, it would undoubtedly be the best commodity the country could yield, both for domestic confumption and for the foreign markets, and would be a far better basis for stocks and funds than the richest mines of gold or silver. Yet, without this, an idea, altogether as romantic, of a trade hither, operated fo strongly upon a very wife nation, as to ferve for the instrument of one of those dangerous masterstrokes in politics, by which nations are sometimes saved, individuals undone, and an entire change and reversement brought about, not only in the common ways of thinking of mankind, but of all that feemed most fixed and permanent in a state. The famous Missifippi scheme in France was of that nature, and built upon such a romantic foundation. It is well known to all the world, both on its own account, and upon account of a fimilar madness that prevailed here, without perhaps being attended with fuch advantageous confequences.

The French settled in Louisiana raise some indigo, a good deal of cotton, some corn and rice, with lumber for their islands; but the colony is not very vigorous, on account of the shoals and sands with which the mouth of the river Missisppi is in a manner choaked up, and which deny access to vessels of any

D 3 confiderable

confiderable burden. This keeps the inhabitants low; but the cause which keeps them from growing rich contributes too to their fecurity; for it is not easy to act with any great force upon that fide. But the French have not relied upon this advantage; but, according to their usual cautions and wife custom, have erected feveral forts in the most material places, and fortified, as it is faid, New Orleans their capital, and indeed the only city in Louisiana, in a regular manner. This city is not remarkably fair, large, or rich; but it is laid out regularly, in a fine fituation on the banks of the Missisppi, in prospect of an higher fortune. The whole colony is faid not to contain above ten thousand souls, whites and negroes. Yet, with all its disadvantages, this colony is not declining; and if ever they should make the mouth of the Missisppi more tractable (and what is impossible to ambition and industry?) if they should come fully to possess and settle the Ohio, which at one feafon overflows, and makes fuch flood as to level all the falls almost from its very fource to the mouth of the Mislisppi, and gives a passage all that way to very considerable vessels (though they have not quite the fame easy return); and if by this and other means they should contrive a communication between Canada and the fettlement at Louisiana, whilst they entirely confine us between

tween our mountains and the fea; Louisiana in a few years will wear quite another face. It will supply their West-Indies with boards, staves, horses, mules, and provisions. It will fend tobacco into France; and, increasing the conveniencies of its mother country and fifter colonies, it will increase its own traffic, its inhabitants, and its power. But the French, not trusting to this remote prospect, have established themselves at the mouth of the Mobile; a river which falls into the gulph of Mexico. And many are of opinion, that this is a more advantageous fituation, not only for the maritime but for the inland commerce, and the communication of their colonies, than the Missisppi. It certainly approaches much nearer to our settlements, and, whilst it serves the French better, is much better calculated to annoy our Southern colonies. We have feen how the French West-Indies, in less than forty years, from a condition which could excite no other fentiments than those of compassion, are risen to such a pitch as to be an object of great and just terror to her neighbours; and we now feel too, that the French settlements in North America, even fuch as they are, are not an undermatch for the whole force of ours, in the manner at least in which that force is exerted.

> CHAP. D 4

it at be-

na-

em

eat

ave

ing

ave

rial

ans in

city

but

OIL

an

ites

ges,

they

ippi

am-

ome

h at

d as

very

and

der-

the

ther

nica-

faid |

fe-

veen

CHAP. VI.

The French policy with regard to their colonies,

HAT we may not fit down in a fenseless admiration of this progress of the French colonies, as if it were the work of fortune, it will not be amifs to open fomething of the wife plan of conduct which France has purfued with regard to this interesting ob-That nation is fensible, as the mother country is to receive ultimately all the benefits of their labours and acquifitions, fo that all the prosperity of their plantations must be derived from the attention with which they are regarded at home. For which reason the plantations are particularly under the care and inspection of the council of commerce; a board very judiciously constituted to answer the purpotes for which it is defigned. To give it a proper respect and authority, it is composed of twelve of the most considerable officers of the crown; and then, to enable it to judge perfectly of the matters which come before it, these twelve are assisted by the deputies of all the confiderable trading towns and cities in France, who are chosen out of the richest and most intelligent of their traders, and paid an handsome salary for their attendance

always

ance at Paris, from the funds of their respective cities. This council fits once a week. deputies propose plans for redressing every grievance in trade; for raifing the branches that are fallen; for extending new ones; for supporting the old; and, in fine, for every thing that may improve the working, or promote the vent of their manufactures, according to their own lights, or to the instructions They have a watchful of their constituents. eye upon every article of commerce; and they not only propose helps and improvements to it her themselves, but they hear the proposals of others, which are not disdainfully rejected, efits nor rashly received. They do not render the access to them difficult, by swelling themselves into a stiff and unwieldy state. do not discourage those who apply, by admitting the vexatious practice of fees, perquifites, and exactions, in their inferior officers. They do not fuffer form and methods to load the and encumber that business, they were solely intended to advance. They fummon and examine those who are supposed the most competent judges of the matter before them, and t to of every part of it, even the lowest artizans: but though they examine those men, they are instructed by their experience, not determined by their opinion. When they are satisfied of t of the usefulness of any regulation, they propose it to the royal council, where their report is end-

185.

ıfethe orof has ob-

the ved reaninoard

give omoffi-

ome

the wns

ders,

ance

always received with particular attention. An edict to enforce it issues accordingly; and it is executed with a punctuality which distinguishes their government, and which alone can make the wifest regulations any thing better than ferious mockeries. To the care of this excellent body the plantations are par-

ticularly entrusted.

The government of the several divisions of their colonies is in a governor, an intendant, and a royal council. The governor is invested with a great deal of power; which however, on the fide of the crown, is checked by the intendant, who has the care of the king's rights, and whatever relates to the revenue; and on the fide of the people, it is checked by the royal council, whose office it is, to fee that the people are not oppressed by the one, nor defrauded by the other; and they are all checked by the constant and jealous eye which the government at home keeps over them. For the officers at all the ports of France are charged, under the severest penalties, to interrogate all captains of ships coming from the colonies concerning the reception they met at the ports they were bound to; how justice was administered to them? what charges they were made liable to, and of what kinds? The passengers, and even the failors, are examined upon these heads, and a verbal process of the whole is formed and tranfcondemning upon it.

An

it

in-

ne

ng

are ar-

of

nt,

in-

ich

ced

the

re-

t is

e it

by

ney

ous

eps

orts pe-

iips

re-

und

m ?

and

the

id a

and

ınf-

That the colonies may have as little load as possible, and that the governor may have iess temptation to stir up troublesome intrigues, or favour factions in his government, his falary is paid by the crown. His perquifites are none; and he is strictly forbidden to carry on any trade, or to have any plantations in the islands, or on the continent, or any interest whatever in goods or lands within his government, except the house he lives in, and a garden for his convenience and recreation. All the other officers are paid by the crown, and out of the revenues of Old France; the fortifications are built and repaired, and the foldiers are paid, out of the fame funds.

In general the colonies pay no taxes; but when, upon an extraordinary emergency, taxes have been raised, they were very moderate. And, that even the taxes might operate for the advancement of the colony, they who began new plantations were exempted from them. The duties upon the export of their produce at the islands, or at its import into France, is next to nothing; in both places hardly making two per cent. What commodities go to them, pay no duties at all.

Befides

44 An Account of the European

Besides these advantages, a considerable benefit accrues to such of the colonies as are poor, as Canada, by the money which comes from France to support the establishment. This brings into Canada about 120,000 crowns a year, which finds them circulating cash; preserves them from the dangerous expedient of a paper currency; enables them to keep up their intercourse with some credit, with their mother country; and at the same time is in sact no loss at all to it, since the money returns home almost as soon as it can possibly be transported back again.

In all their islands, judges of the admiralty are appointed to decide in a summary manner all disputes between merchants, and whatsoever else has any relation to trade. These judges are strictly examined before they are appointed, particularly as to their skill in the marine laws, which have been improved and digested in France with so much care and good sense, that all law-suits are quickly over; though in other respects the practice of law admits of as much chicanery, and has as many, if not more delays, than with us.

After having taken such precautions to secure the good government of the colony within itself, and to make its communication with the mother country easy and beneficial to both sides, all would be to very little purpose, if they had not provided with equal care to

have

ole

are

es

nt.

00

ng

ex-

to

dit,

me

the

can

alty

ner

tſo-

are

the

and

and

ver;

law

s as

fe-

ith-

vith

l to

bose,

e to

have the country replenished with people. To answer this end, they oblige every ship which departs from France for America, to carry a certain number of indentured fervants. All vessels of fixty tuns or under are to carry three; from fixty to a hundred, four; and from a hundred upwards, fix fervants; found strong bodies, between the ages of eighteen and forty. Before their departure, the servants are examined by the officers of the admiralty, to fee whether they are the persons required by law; an examination to the same purpose is made by the commissary on their landing in America. They are to ferve three years. The avarice of the planters make them always prefer negroe flaves, because they are more obedient than the Europeans; may be more worked, are subsisted with less difficulty, and are besides the entire property of their master. This disposition, in time, would render the fafety of the colony extremely precarious, whilst it made the colony itself of less value to the mother country. Therefore the planters are by law obliged to keep a certain number of white fervants in proportion to their blacks; and the execution of this law is inforced by the commissary, who adjusts the price, and forces the planters to take the number of fervants required by the ordinance, who would otherwise be a burden upon the hands of the masters of ships who brought them over. They

They consider the planter, as a Frenchman venturing his life, enduring a species of banishment, and undergoing great hardships, for the benefit of his country. For which reasons, he has great indulgence shewn him. Whenever, by hurricanes, earthquakes, or bad seafons, the planters suffer, a stop is put to the rigour of exacting creditors; the few taxes which are levied, are remitted; and even money is advanced to repair their losses and set them forward. To those who are poor, but shew a disposition to industry, necessaries and fmall fums are lent to make a beginning; and this money is taken in gradually, and by very fmall payments. On the other hand, as it can be of no advantage to the planter to run fraudulently into debt, but is of the greatest prejudice to the French merchant, all debts, though contracted by the planters in France, are levied with great ease. The process, properly authenticated, is transmitted to America, and admitted as proved there, and levied on the planter's estate, of whatsoever kind it may be. However, care is taken, that, whilst compulsory methods are used to make the planter do justice, the state shall not lose the industry of an useful member of the community; the debt is always levied according to the substance of the debtor, and by installment; so that (what ought indeed to be the case in every well-regulated government) one

of the parties is not facrificed to the other. Both subfist; the creditor is satisfied; the debtor is not ruined; and the credit of the colonies is kept in health and vigour at home, by the fure methods which are in use for reco-

vering all demands in the plantations.

nan oa-

for

ns,

enea-

the

xcs

nofet

but

and

ng;

by and,

nter

, all

pro-

d to

and

ever

that,

nake

: lose

com-

ding

stall-

e the

) one

of

As to the negroes, they are not left as they are with us, wholly, body and foul, to the discretion of the planter. Their masters are obliged to have them instructed in the principles of religion. There are methods taken at once to protect the flaves from the cruelty of their owners, and to preserve the colony from the ill effects that might arise from treating their with a lenity not confistent with their condition. In short, the Code Noir, and other ordinances relative to these poor creatures, shew a very just and sensible mixture of humanity and steadiness. There is however one error, their planters commit in common with ours; which is, that they over-work these unhappy men in a manner not fuitable to the nature of the climate, or to their constitutions.

I have dwelt the longer upon the French policy as it regards their colonies, because it is just to give due honour to all those who advance the intercourse of mankind, the peopling of the earth, and the advantage of their country, by wife and effectual regulations. But I principally infift upon it, that it may, if posfible,

fible, serve for an example to ourselves; that it may excite an emulation in us; that it may help to rouse us out of that languor into which we feem to be fallen. The war we now carry on principally regards our colonies, and is a sufficient proof that we are come at last to know their value. But, if we are not to hope for better success than has hitherto attended a very just cause, the next peace will probably contract the field we hoped to lay open to our industry in America. We ought therefore to cultivate what still remains of it, with tenfold industry; we ought to guard with the most unremitting vigilance that enclosed fpring, that sealed fountain, the waters of which we referve to ourselves, and direct into fuch channels, and make to purfue fuch windings and turnings, as best serve our purposes. We have, I believe, pretty well discovered most of our errors, and the advantage our enemy and rival has taken, not only of our fupineness, but of a contrary genius in his own councils. We ought to rouse ourselves from the former, and prepare to imitate the latter. Our bufiness is to fight against Alexander, not to rail at him. And truly, I do not know any thing, that for this long time past has contributed more to degrade our character for humanity in the eyes of foreigners, or to instil into ourselves a low and illiberal way of thinking,

that may hich card is ift to hope ded a pably n to herewith with closed ers of t into windposes. vered e our ur susown from latter. ander, know oft has aracter or to way of

nking,

thinking, than that vein of licentious scurrility and abuse, by which, in all sorts of writings, we are apt to vilify and traduce the French na-There is nothing, which hinders people from acting properly, more than indulging themselves in a vain and effeminate licence of tongue. A man who loves his country, and can at once oppose and esteem an enemy, would view our present circumstances in a light, I conceive, fomewhat like the following. We have been engaged for above a century with France in a noble contention for the fuperiority in arms, in politics, in learning, and in commerce; and there never was a time, perhaps, when this struggle was more critical. If we succeed in the war, even our fuccess, unless managed with prudence, will be, like some former successes, of little benefit to us; if we should fail, which God forbid, even then, prudence may make our misfortunes of more use to us, than an ill-managed success: if they teach us to avoid our former errors; if they make us less careless; if they make us cultivate the advantages we have with care and judgment: this; and not our opinion of the enemy, must decide the long contest between us.

100000

CHAP. VII.

The Dutch settlements. Curassou. The city, its trade. The Spanish contraband. Eufatia. The Danish company. The Danish island of Santa Cruz. The characters of the several European nations as they regard America.

FTER the Portuguese had dispossessed the Dutch of Brazil in the manner we have seen, and after the treaty of Nimeguen had entirely removed them out of North America, they were obliged to confole themselves with their rich possessions in the East-Indies, and to fit down content in the West with Surinam; a country on the North-East part of South America, of no great value whilst we had it, and which we ceded to them in exchange for New-York; and with two or three small and barren islands in the Northsea not far from the Spanish main. The former of these they are far from neglecting; they raise some sugar in Surinam; a great deal of cotton; coffee of an excellent kind, and fome valuable dying drugs. They trade with our North American colonies, who bring hither horses, live, cattle and provisions, and take home a large quantity of molasses; but their negroes are only the refuse of those they they have for the Spanish market; and the Indians in their neighbourhood are their mortal enemies. On the same continent they have three other settlements at no considerable distance from each other, Boron, Berbice, and Approwack; none very great, but producing the same commodities with Surinam.

The islands which they possess are four, Curaffou, St. Eustatia, Aruba, and Bonaire; none of them large or fertile, but turned to the best advantage possible by that spirit of industry for which the Dutch are justly famous. Curacco, or Curaffou, as it is generally called, is about thirty miles long, and ten in breadth. Though it is naturally barren, it produces a confiderable quantity both of fugar and tobacco, and here are besides very great falt works, which furnish a good deal to the English islands, and for which there is a confiderable demand from our colonies on the continent; but the trade for which this island is chiefly valuable, is that which in time of war is carried on between them, the English, and the French; and the contraband which is carried on between them and the Spaniards at all times.

The Dutch vessels from Europe touch at this island for intelligence or proper pilots, and then proceed to the Spanish coast upon a trade which they force with a strong hand.

E 2

It

city, Euanish rs of egard

Feffed
er we
eguen
North
hemEaftWest
n-Eaft
value
them
two or

The cting; at deal d, and le with bring

North-

s, and
s; but
f those
they

It is very difficult for the Spanish guarda costas to take these vessels; for they are not only stout ships with a number of guns; but, by a very wife policy, manned with a large crew of chosen seamen, who are all deeply interested in the safety of the vessel and the fuccess of the voyage. They have each a share in the cargo, of a value proportioned to the owner's station, supplied by the merchants upon credit, and at prime cost. animates them with an uncommon courage; they fight bravely, because every man fights in defence of his own property. But there is, besides this, a constant intercourse between the Spanish continent and this island.

This island of Curassou has its numerous warehouses always full of the commodities of Europe and the East-Indies. Here are all forts of woollen and linen cloths, laces, filks, ribbands, utenfils of iron, naval and military stores, brandy, the spices of the Moluccas, and the callicoes of India, white and painted. Hither the West-India, which is likewise their African company, bring three or four cargoes of flaves annually. To this mart, the Spaniards come themselves in small vessels, and carry off not only the best of their negroes, and at the best price, but very great quantities of all forts of goods I have mentioned; with this advantage to the feller, that the refuse of warehouses

and

and mercers shops, things grown utterly unfashionable and unsaleable in Europe, go off extremely well, where every thing is fufficiently recommended by being European, They leave here their gold and filver in bars or coined, cacao, vanilla, cochineal, jesuit's bark, hides, and other valuable commodities. The ships that trade directly from Holland to the Spanish continent, as they touch here on their outward passage to gain intelligence or affistance, on their return put in here likewise to compleat what is wanting of their cargo, with the fugar, the tobacco, the ginger, and other produce of the island itself. The trade of this island, even in time of peace, is reputed to be worth to the Dutch no less than 500,000l, sterling annually, but in time of war the profit is far greater, for then it is in a manner the common emporium of the West-Indies; it affords a great retreat to the ships of all nations, and at the same time refuses to none of them arms and ammunition to annoy one another. The intercourse with Spain being interrupted, the Spanish colonies have scarce any other market, from whence they can be well supplied either with slaves or goods; the French come hither to buy the beef, pork, corn, flour, and lumber, which the English bring from the continent of North America, or which is transported from Ireland; so that, whether in peace or in war,

but ods to

da

10**t**

ut,

ge

n-

he

i a

ned

erhis

ge;

hts is,

the

ous

ties

are

ces,

and

Mo-

and

h is

nre**e** this

nall

ules

and

the trade of this island flourishes extremely. Nor is this owing to any natural advantage whatfoever. It feems as if it were fated, that the ingenuity and patience of the Hollanders should every where, both in Europe and America, be employed in fighting against an unfriendly nature; for the island is not only barren, and dependent upon the rains for its water but the harbour is naturally one of the worst in America: yet the Dutch have entirely remedied that defect; they have upon this harbour one of the largest, and by far the most elegant and cleanly towns in the American islands. The public buildings are numerous and handsome; the private houses commodious; and the magazines large, convenient, and well filled. All kind of labour is here performed by engines; some of them so dexterously contrived, that ships are at once lifted into the dock, where they are compleatly careened; and then furnished with naval stores, provisions, cannon, and every thing requisite either for trade or war.

Eustatia is but one mountain of about twenty miles in compass; it is amongst the Leeward islands; but, though so small and inconveniently laid out by nature, the industry of the Dutch have made it turn out to very good account, and it is fully peopled; the sides of the mountain are divided and laid out in very pretty settlements; and,

though

though they have neither springs nor rivers, they are so careful that they never want proper supplies of water from their ponds and cisterns. They raise here sugar and tobacco; and this island, as well as Curassou, is engaged in the Spanish contraband trade, for which, however, it is not so well situated; and it draws the same advantages from its constant neutrality.

As for Aruba and Bonaire; they lie near Curassou, and have no trade of consequence; they are chiesly employed in raising fresh provisions for the principal island, and for the refreshment of such ships as use these

feas.

The trade of all the Dutch American settlements was originally carried on by the West-India company only. At present such ships as go upon that trade pay two and a half per cent. for their licences; the company however reserves to itself, the whole of what is carried on between Africa and the American islands.

The Danes had likewise a West-India company, though its object was far from extensive. It was little more than the island of St. Thomas, an inconsiderable member of the Caribbees; lately they have added to their possessions the island of Santa Cruz in the same cluster. These islands, so long as they remained in the hands of the com-

E 4

pany,

the and inout led; and and, ough

ly.

ge

at

ers

ind

an

nly

for

e of

ave

pon

the

eri-

rer-

om-

ive-

ır is

n fo

bnce

om-

with

very

pany, were ill managed, and nothing like the proper advantage was made of them; but the present king of Denmark, inferior to none who ever fat upon that or any other throne, in love to his subjects, and a judicious zeal for promoting their welfare, has bought up that company's stock, and laid the trade open. Since then, the old fettlement at St. Thomas is very; much improved; it produces upwards of three thousand hogsheads of sugar at a thousand weight each, and others of the West-Indian commodities in tolerable plenty; and as for Santa Cruz, from a perfect defart a few years fince, it is beginning to fettle fast; several persons from the English islands, and amongst them some of great wealth, have gone to fettle there, and have received very great encouragement to do fo. The air of the place is extremely unhealthful, but this ill disposition will probably continue no longer than the woods, with which the island at present is almost wholly covered. These two nations, the Dutch and Danes, hardly deserve to be mentioned among the proprietors of America; their possessions there are comparatively nothing. But, as they appear extremely worthy of the attention of these powers, and as the share of the Dutch is worth to them at least fix hundred thousand pounds sterling a year, what must we think of

of our possessions? what attention do they not deserve from us? and what may not be made of them by that attention?

of them by that attention?

the

but

r to

ther

dici-

has laid

ttle-

ved:

hog-

each,

nodi-

Santa

years

veral

ongst

e to great

the

is ill

onger

id at

e two

ferve

rs of

com-

ppear

these

ch is

usand

think of There feems to be a remarkable providence in casting the parts, if I may use that expression, of the several European nations who act upon the stage of America. The Spaniard, proud, lazy, and magnificent, has an ample walk in which to expatiate; a soft climate to indulge his love of ease; and a profusion of gold and silver to procure him all those luxuries his pride demands, but which his lazines would resuse him.

The Portuguese, naturally indigent at home, and enterprizing rather than industrious abroad, has gold and diamonds as the Spaniards has, wants them as he does, but possesses them in a more useful, though a less

ostentatious manner.

The English, of a reasoning disposition, thoughtful and cool, and men of business rather than of great industry, impatient of much fruitless labour, abhorrent of constraint, and lovers of a country life, have a lot which indeed produces neither gold nor silver; but they have a large tract of a fine continent; a noble field for the exercise of agriculture, and sufficient to surnish their trade without laying them under great difficulties. Intolerant as they are of the most useful restraints, their commerce flourishes from the freedom

every

own ideas, and directing his life after his own fashion.

The French, active, lively, enterprizing, pliable, and politic, and though changing their pursuits always pursuing the present object with eagerness, are notwithstanding tractable and obedient to rules and laws, which bridle these dispositions and wind and turn them to proper courses. This people have a country, where more is to be effected by managing the people than by cultivating the ground; where a pedling commerce, that requires constant motion, flourishes more than agriculture or a regular traffic; where they have difficulties which keep them alert by struggling with them, and where their obedience to a wife government serves them for personal wisdom. In the islands, the whole is the work of their policy, and a right turn their government has taken.

The Dutch have got a rock or two on which to display the miracles of frugality and diligence (which are their virtues), and on which they have exerted these virtues, and shewn those miracles.

o his

zing, their bje& ctable bridle em to

intry,
ig the
where
inftant
e or a
culties
with

a wife ifdom. f their has

wo on ty and and on s, and

ART

P A R T VI.

The English Settlements:

.

CHAP, I,

ordioteken kalanata (j. 14.444) diakakan kalanatakan kalanatakan kalanatakan kalanatakan kalanatakan kalanatak

The division of the English West-Indies. Description of Jamaica. Conquest of that island.

THE English colonies are the fairest objects of our attention in America; not only as they comprehend a vast and delightful variety of climates, situations, natural products, and improvements of art; but as they contain, though the dominions of one potentate, and their inhabitants formed out of the people of one nation, an almost equal variety of manners, religions, and ways of living. They have a most flourishing trade with their mother country, and they communicate widely with many foreign nations; for, besides the constant and

and useful intercourse they hold with Africa, their ships are seen in the ports of Spain, Portugal, Italy, and even in the Levant; nor are they excluded the American settlements of France, Spain, Portugal, and Holland. This, with their constant correspondence with each other and with their mother country, hurries about a lively circulation of trade, of which Great Britain is the heart and spring, from whence it takes its rise, and to which it all returns in the end.

In some of the European settlements, we have seen the effects of a vast ambition supported by surprizing seats of a romantic courage mixed with an insatiable thirst of gold. In others, the regular product of a systematic policy tempering and guiding an active industry. But in our own colonies we are to display the effects of liberty; the work of a people guided by their own genius, and sollowing the directions of their own natural temper in a proper path.

I intend to consider the English colonies under two principal divisions; the first I allot to those islands which lie under the torrid zone between the tropic of Cancer and the Equinoctial line, in that part generally called the West-Indies. The second is to comprehend our possessions in the temperate zone on the continent of North Ame-

The West-India islands shall be confidered, as they are amongst the Greater Antilles; the Windward; or the Leeward islands. Amongst the first we possess the large and noble island of Jamaica; amongst the fecond we have Barbadoes; and in the third St. Christopher's, Antigua, Nevis, Montserrat, and Barbuda. As all these islands lie between the tropics, whatever is to be faid of the air, winds, meteors, and natural produce, shall fall under one head, as they are the same or nearly the same in all of them; their produce for the market is nearly the same too; and therefore whatever is to be faid of the manufacturing of 'those, shall come together, after we have given a concise description of the state of each island separately.

Jamaica lies between the 75th and 79th degrees of West longitude from London, and is between seventeen and nineteen degrees distant from the Equinoctial. It is in length, from East to West, a hundred and forty English miles; in breadth about sixty; and of an oval form. This country is in a manner intersected with a ridge of losty mountains, rugged and rocky, that are called the blue mountains. On each side of the blue mountains are chains of lesser mountains gradually lower. The greater mountains are little better than so many rocks;

where

ain,
nt;
tleand
corheir
cirn is
ikes

ica,

we upouold. atic

the

e to
of a
folural

nies
It I
the
ncer
enecond
em-

rica.

where there is any earth, it is only a stubborn clay fit for no fort of husbandry. The mountains are very steep, and the rocks tumbled upon one another in a manner altogether stupendous, the effect of the frequent earthquakes which have shaken this island in all times. Yet, barren as these mountains are, they are all covered to the very top with a great variety of beautiful trees, flourishing in a perpetual ipring; their roots penetrate the crannies of the rocks, and fearch out the moisture which is lodged there by the rains that fall so frequently on these mountains, and the mists that almost perpetually brood upon them. These rocks too are the parents of a vast number of fine rivulets, which tumble down their fides in cataracts, that form, amongst the rudeness of the rocks and precipices and the shining verdure of the trees, the most wildly-pleasing imagery imaginable. The face of this country is a good deal different from what is generally obferved in other places. For as on one hand the mountains are very steep; so the plans between them are perfectly smooth and level. In these plains, the soil, augmented by the wash of the mountains for so many ages, is prodigiously fertile. None of our islands produce so fine sugars. They formerly had here cacao in great perfection, which delights in a rich ground. Their pastures after the rains

rains are of a most beautiful verdure, and extraordinary fatness. They are called savannas. On the whole, if this island were not troubled with great thunders and lightnings, hurricanes and earthquakes; and, if the air was not at once violently hot, damp, and extremely unwholsome in most parts, the fertility and beauty of this country would make it as desirable a situation for pleasure, as it is for the profits, which in spite of these disadvantages draw hither such a number of people.

The river waters are many of them unwholsome and taste of copper; but some springs there are of a better kind. In the plains are found several salt sountains; and in the mountains, not far from Spanish-town, is a hot bath, of extraordinary medicinal virtues. It relieves in the dry belly-ach, one of the most terrible endemial distempers of Jamaica, and in various other com-

plaints.

ub-

The

ocks

alto-

uent

lland

tains

with

hing

trate

t the

rains

tains,

arents

which

, that

ks and

of the

ima-

a good

ly ob-

e hand

plans

level.

by the

ages,

islands

ly had

ter the

rains

This island came into our possession during the usurpation of Cromwell, and by means of an armament which had another destination. Cromwell, notwithstanding the great abilities which enabled him to overturn the constitution and to trample upon the liberties of his country, was not sufficiently acquainted with foreign politics. This ignorance made him connect himself closely with

with France, then rising into a dangerous grandeur, and to fight with great animosity the shadow which remained of the Spanish power. On such ideas he sitted out a formidable sleet, with a view to reduce the island of Hispaniola; and, though he failed in this design, Jamaica made amends not only for this failure, but almost for the ill policy which first drew him into hostilities with the Spaniards; by which, however, he added this excellent country to the British dominions.

There was nothing of the genius of Cromwell to be feen in the planning of this expedition. From the first to the last, all was wrong; all was a chain of little interested mismanagement, and had no air of the result of absolute power lodged in great hands. The fleet was ill victualled; the troops ill provided with necessaries to support and encourage men badly chosen and worse armed. They embarked in great discontent. generals were but little better fatisfied, and had little more hopes, than the foldiers. But the generals (for there were two in the command, Penn and Venables, one for the marine, the other for the land fervice) were men of no extraordinary talents. And, it they had been men of the best capacity, little was to be expected from two commanders not subordinate, and so differing in their ideas. 1 1

rous

ofity

mish

for-

ailed

not

ne ill

lities r, he

ritish

s of

this

was

refult ands.

os ill

ll en-

med. The

and

But

r the

were

little

nders

their

deas,

ideas, and fo envious of each other as land and sea-officers generally are. But, to make this arrangement perfect in all respects, and to prove the advantages arising from a divided command, they added a number of commissioners as a check upon both. This tripartite generalship, in the truest Dutch taste, produced the effects that might be expected from it. The foldiers differed with the generals, the generals disagreed with one another, and all quarrelled with the commissioners. The place of their landing in Hispaniola was ill chosen, and the manner of it wretchedly contrived. The army had near forty miles to march before it could act; and the foldiers. without order, without heart, fainting and dying by the excessive heat of the climate and the want of necessary provisions, and disheartened yet more by the cowardice and discontent of their officers, yielded an easy victory to an handful of Spaniards. They retired ignominiously and with great loss.

But the principal commanders, a little reconciled by their misfortunes, and fearing to return to England without effect, very wifely turned their thoughts another way. They resolved to attempt Jamaica, before the inhabitants of that island could receive encouragement by the news of their deseat in Hispaniola. They knew that this island Vol. II.

66 An Account of the European

was in no good posture of defence; and they set themselves vigorously to avoid the mistakes, which proved so fatal in the former expedition. They severely punished the officers who had shewn an ill example by their cowardice; and they ordered, with respect to the soldiers, that, if any attempted to run away, the man nearest to him should shoot him.

Fortified with these regulations, they landed in Jamaica, and laid siege to St. Jago de la Vega, now called Spanish-town, the capital of the island. The people, who were in no condition to oppose an army of ten thousand men and a strong naval force, would have surrendered immediately, if they had not been encouraged by the strange delays of our generals and their commissioners. However at last the town with the whole island surrendered, but not until the inhabitants had secreted their most valuable effects in the mountains.

CHAP. II.

The settlement of Jamaica. The sailure of caçao. The buccancers. The slourishing state of that island. Its decline in some respects.

FTER the restoration, the Spaniards ceded the island to our court. Cromwell had fettled there some of the troops employed in its reduction; some royalists, uneasy, at home sought an asylum in this island; not a few planters from Barbadoes were invited to Jamaica by the extraordinary fertility of the foil, and the other advantages which it offered. These latter taught the former fettlers the manner of raifing the fugar cane, and making fugar; for at first they had wholly applied themfelves to the raifing of cacao, as the Spaniards had done before them. It was happy for them that they fell into this new practice; for the cacao-groves planted by the Spaniards began to fail, and the new plantations did not answer, as the negroes foretold they would not, because of the want of certain religious ceremonies always used by the Spaniards in planting them, at which none of the flaves were fuffered to be present, and to the use of which they attributed the prosperity of these plantations.

IAP.

nd he

)r-

ed

ith ted

uld

ded

e la

ital

no

land

nave

not

our

ever

fur-

had

the

tions. Probably there were methods taken at that time, that were covered by the veil of these religious ceremonies, which are necessary to the well-being of that plant. However that be, the cacao has never since equalled the reputation of the Spanish, but gave way to the more profitable cultivation of

indigo and fugar.

"But what gave the greatest life to this new settlement, and raised it at once to a furprizing pitch of opulence, which it hardly equals even in our days, was the refort thither of those pirates called the buccaneers. These men, no fought with the most desperate bravery, and fpent their plunder with the most stupid extravagance, were very welcome guests in Jamaica. They often brought two, three, and four hundred thousand pieces of eight at a time, which were immediately fquandered in all the ways of excessive gaming, wine and women. Vast fortunes were made, and the returns of treasure to England were prodigiously great. In the island they had by this means raised fuch funds, that, when the fource of this wealth was stopped up by the suppression of the pirates, they were enabled to turn their industry into better channels. They increased so fast, that it was computed that, in the beginning of this century, they had fixty thousand whites and a hundred and twenty thousand negroes in this island. This calculation is certainly too large. However, the Jamaicans were undoubtedly very numerous until reduced by earthquakes (one of which entirely ruined Port-Royal, and killed a vast number of persons in all parts of the country) and by terrible epidemical diseases, which, treading on the heels of the former calamities, fwept away vast multitudes: losses which have not been fince fufficiently repaired. At present the white inhabitants fcarcely exceed twenty five thoufand fouls; the blacks are about ninety thoufand; both much less numerous than formerly, and with a disproportion much greater on the fide of the whites.

er

rè

eý

ed

ch

hė

n.

of

at'.

fed

his

ion

ırn

ney

nat,

had

and

nty

It appears at present, that Jamaica is rather upon the decline; a point this that deferves the most attentive consideration. A country which contains at least four millions of acres, has a fertile foil, an extensive sea coast, and may very fine harbours; for an island so circumstanced, and at a time when the value of all its products at market is considerably risen; for such a country to fall short of its former numbers, and not to have above three or four hundred thousand acres employed in any fort of culture, shews clearly that fomething must be very wrong in the management of its affairs; and, what shews it even yet more clearly, land is so

extravagantly

70 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

extravagantly dear in many of the other islands, as to sell sometimes for one hundred pounds an acre and upwards; a price that undoubtedly never would be paid, if convenient land was to be had, and proper encouragement given, in Jamaica. Whether this be owing to public or private faults, I know not; but certain it is, that, wherever they are, they deserve a speedy and effectual remedy from those, in whose power it is to apply it.

CHAP. III.

The products of Jamaica. Piemento. Sugar. Rum. Molasses. Cotton. Ginger. The logwood trade. Disputes about it. The contraband. Slave trade.

HE natural products of Jamaica, befides fugar, cacao, and ginger, are
principally piemento, or, as it is called, allfpice, or Jamaica pepper. The tree which
bears the piemento rifes to the height of
above thirty feet. It is ftraight, of a moderate thickness, and covered with a grey bark
extremely smooth and shining. It shoots
out a vast number of branches upon all sides,
that bear a plentiful foliage of very large
and beautiful leaves of a shining green, in
all things resembling the leaf of the bay tree.

At the very ends of the twigs are formed bunches of flowers; each stalk bearing a flower which bends back, and within which bend are to be different fome stamina of a pale green colour; to these succeeds a bunch of fmall crowned berries, larger when ripe than juniper berries; at that feafon they change from their former green, and become black, smooth, and shining; they are taken unripe from the tree, and dried in the fun; in this case they assume a brown colour, and have a mixed flavour of many kinds of spice, whence it is called allspice. But it is milder than the other spices, and is judged to be inferior to none of them for the service which it does to cold, watery, and languid stomachs. The tree grows mostly upon the mountains.

Besides this, they have the wild cinamon tree, whose bark is so serviceable in medicine; the manchineel, a most beautiful tree to the eye, with the fairest apple in the world, and when cut down affording a very fine ornamental wood for the joiners, but the apple, and the juice in every part of the tree, contain one of the worst poisons in nature. Here is the mahogany, in such general use with our cabinet makers; the cabbage tree, a tall plant, samous for a substance, looking and tasting like cabbage, growing on the very top, and no less remarkable for the extreme hardness of its

7 4

At

er

ed

at

11-

n-

aer

lts,

ver

ual

s to

gar.

The

The

be-

are

all-

hich

ht of

node-

bark

hoots

fides,

large

en, in

v tree.

wood, which, when dry, is incorruptible, and hardly yields to any tool; the palma, from which is drawn a great deal of oil, much esteemed by the negroes both in food and medicine; the white wood, which never breeds the worm in ships; the soap tree, whose berries answer all purposes of washing; the mangrove and olive bark, useful to tanners; the fustic and redwood to the dyers, and lately the logwood; and their forests supply the apothecary with guaiacum, falfaparilla, china, cassia, and tamarinds; they have aloes too; and do not want the cochineal plant, though they know nothing of the art of managing it; nor perhaps is the climate fuit-The indigo plant was formerly much cultivated; the cotton tree is still so, and they fend home more of its wool than all the rest of our islands together.

The whole product therefore of the island may be reduced to these heads. First, sugars, of which they imported in 1753 twenty thousand three hundred and fifteen hogsheads, some vastly great even to a tun weight, which cannot be worth less in England than 424,725 pounds sterling. Most of this goes to London and Bristol, and some part of it to North America, in return for the beef, pork, cheese, corn, pease, staves, plank, pitch, and tar, which they have from thence. 2. Rum, of which they export about

ch

e-

ds

ble

he

rs;

nd

ply

lla,

oes

ant,

of

uit-

uch

and

the

land

fu-

enty

hog-

ight,

land

t of

forme

a for

aves,

xport

about 4000 puncheons. The rum of this island is generally esteemed the best, and is the most used in England. 3. Molasses, in which they make a great part of their returns for New England, where there are vast distilleries. All these are the produce of their grand staple the sugar cane. 4. Cotton, of which they fend out 2000 bags. indigo, formerly much cultivated, is now inconfiderable, but some cacao and coffee are exported, which latter is in no great esteem; though it is said to be little inferior to that of Mocha, provided it be kept for two or three years. With these they send home a considerable quantity of piemento, ginger, drugs for dyers and apothecaries, iweetmeats, and mahogany and manchineel plank. But some of the most considerable articles of their trade are with the Spanish continent of New Spain and Terra Firma; for in the former they cut great quantities of logwood, and both in the former and latter they drive a vast and profitable trade in negroes, and all kinds of the same European goods, which are carried thither from Old Spain by the flota.

Both the logwood trade and this contraband have been the subjects of much contention, and the cause of a war between ours and the Spanish nation. The former we avow, and we claim it as our right;

though

74 An Account of the European

though, in the last treaty of peace, that point was far from being well settled. The latter we permit; because we think, and very justly, that if the Spaniards find themselves aggrieved by any contraband trade, it lies upon them, and not upon us, to put a stop to it.

Formerly we cut logwood in the bay of Campeachy, on the northern fide of the peninfula of Jucatan. But the Spaniards have driven our people entirely from thence, and built forts and made fettlements to prevent them from returning. Expelled from thence, the logwood cutters fettled upon the gulph of Honduras, on the fouthern fide of the same peninfula, where they are in some fort established, and have a fort to protect them. They are an odd kind of people, composed mostly of vagabonds and fugitives from all parts of North America, and their way of life is suitable. They live pretty much in a lawless manner, though they elect one amongst them whom they call their king; and to him they pay as much obedience as they think fit. The country they are in is low, and extremely marshy; the air is prodigiously molested with muskettoes; and the water dangerous with alligators; yet a life of licentiousness, a plenty of brandy, large gains, and a want of thought, have perfectly reconciled them to the hardships of their employment and the unwholfand five hundred men.

oint

tter

very lves

lies

ftop

y of

pen-

have

and

event

ince,

fame esta-

hem.

posed

n all

ay of

in a

ongit

him k fit.

emelefted

erous

ineis,

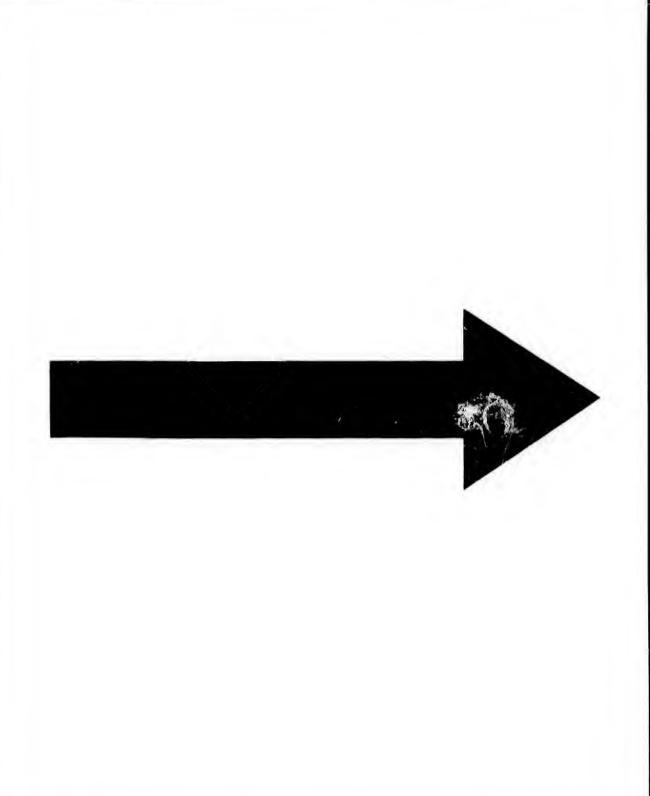
want

em to

In the dry season, when they cut the logwood, they advance a considerable way into the country, following the logwood, which runs amongst the other trees of the forest, like the vein of a mineral in the earth. When the rains have overslowed the whole country, they have marks by which they know where the logwood is deposited. This is an heavy wood, and finks in the water. However, it is easily buoyed up, and one diver can lift very large beams. These they carry by the favour of the land-sloods into the river, to a place which is called the Barcaderas or Port, where they meet the ships that come upon this trade.

In the year 1716, when the debate concerning this matter was revived, the lords of trade reported, that before the year 1676 we had a number of people fettled and carrying on this trade on the peninfula of Jucatan; that we always confidered this as our right, and were supported in it by our kings; and that this right was confirmed, if it had wanted any confirmation, by a clause of uti possibilities in the treaty of peace which was concluded with Spain and the court of London in 1676; and that we certainly were in full possession of those settlements and that trade,

long



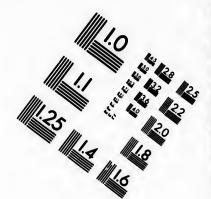
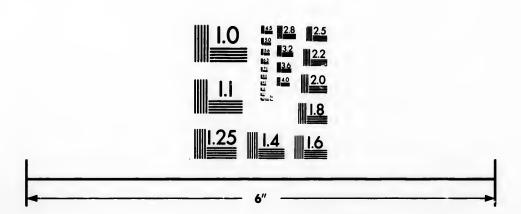
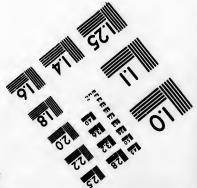


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503





76 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

long before the time of that treaty; and further, that the Spaniards themselves have incidentally drawn a great advantage from it, fince the pirates, who were formerly the most resolved and effectual enemies they ever had, were the more easily restrained from their enterprizes, by having their minds diverted to this employment. Upon the whole, they concluded it an affair very well worth the attention of the government, as in some years it engaged near fix thousand tun of shipping; found employment for a number of seamen proportionable; confumed a good deal of our manufactures, and was of considerable use in fabricating many others; and that the whole walue of the returns were not less than fixty thousand pounds sterling a year. Notwithstanding this, our claim seems dropped, nor is it very clear how far it can be maintained, to carry on a trade by violence in a country, in which we can hardly claim, according to the common ideas of right in America, any property. However this may be, the trade. though with many difficulties and discouragements, still continues, and will probably continue whilst the Spaniards are so weak upon that fide of Mexico, and while the coast continues so disagreeable, that none but desperate persons will venture to reside there. The logwood trade is generally carried on by veffels from New England, New York, and PennfylPennfylvania, who take up the goods they want

in Jamaica.

it,

ost

id,

n-

to

ey

at-

it

g;

ien

our

in

ole

xty

th-

nor

led,

try,

to

any

ide,

ge-

on-

pon

on-

fpe-

The

veſ-

fyl-

But there is a trade yet more profitable carried on between this island and the Spanish continent, especially in time of war. too has been the cause of much bickering between us and the court of Spain, and it will yet be more difficult for them to put a stop to this trade than to the former, whilst the Spaniards are so eager for it, whilst it is so profitable to the British merchant, and whilst the Spanish officers from the highest to the lowest shew so great a respect to presents properly made. The trade is carried on in this The ship from Jamaica, having manner. taken in negroes and a proper fortment of goods there, proceeds in time of peace to a harbour called the Grout within Monkey-key, about four miles from Porto-bello. A person, who understands Spanish, is directly sent ashore to give the merchants of the town notice of the arrival of the vessel; the same news is carried likewise with great speed to Panama; from whence the merchants fet out disguised like peasants with their silver in jars covered with meal, to deceive the officers of the revenue. Here the ship remains trading frequently for five or fix weeks together. The Spaniards usually come on board, leave their money, and take their negroes, and their goods packed up in parcels fit for one man to

carry, after having been handsomely entertained on board, and receiving provisions sufficient for their journey homeward. If the whole cargo is not disposed of here, they bear off eastward to the Brew, a harbour about five miles distant from Carthagena, where they foon find a vent for the rest. There is no trade more profitable than this; for your payments are made in ready money, and the goods fell higher than they would at any other market. It is not on this coast only, but every where upon the Spanish main, that this trade is carried on; nor is it by the English only, but the French from Hispaniola, the Dutch from Curaffou, and even the Danes have some share in it. When the Spanish guarda costas seize upon one of these vessels, they make no scruple of confiscating the cargo, and of treating the crew in a manner little better than pirates.

This commerce in time of peace, and this with the prizes that are made in time of war, pour into Jamaica an aftonishing quantity of treasure; great fortunes are made in a manner instantly, whilst the people appear to live in such a state of luxury as in all other places leads to beggary. Their equipages, their cloaths, their furniture, their tables, all bear the tokens of the greatest wealth and profusion imaginable; this obliges all the treasure they receive to make but a very short stay, as

all this treasure, added to all the products of the island itself, is hardly more than sufficient to answer the calls of their necessity and luxury on Europe and North America, and their demand for slaves, of which this island is under the necessity of an annual recruit for its own use and that of the Spanish trade, of upwards of six thousand head, and which stand them one with another in thirty pounds apiece, and often more.

ır

at

re

is

ur

he

ny ly, nat

g-

ıla,

nes

ish

els, go,

et-

this

var,

of

ner

in

aces

heir

pear

ofu-

fure

y, as

all

CHAP. IV.

Port-Royal. The earthquake 1692. Kingfton. St. Jago de la Vega, or Spanish-town. Disputes about the removal of the seat of government.

HE whole island is divided into nineteen districts or parishes, which send each of them two members to the assembly, and allow a competent maintenance to a minister. Port-Royal was anciently the capital of the island; it stood upon the very point of a long narrow neck of land, which, towards the sea, formed part of the border of a very noble harbour of its own name. In this harbour above a thousand sail of the largest ships could anchor with the greatest convenience and safety; and the water was so deep at the key of Port-Royal, that vessels of the greatest burden

burden could lay their broadfides to the wharfs, and load and unload at little expence or trouble. This conveniency weighed fo much with the inhabitants, that they chose in this spot to build their capital, though the place was an hot dry fand, which produced not one of the necessaries of life, no not even fresh water. However, this advantageous situation and the refort of the pirates foon made it a very confiderable place. It contained two thousand houses very handsomely built, and which rented as high as those in London. had a refort like a constant fair, by the great concourse of people of business, and grew to all this in about thirty years time; for before that there was scarcely an house upon the place. In short, there were very few places in the world, which for the fize could be compared to this town for trade, wealth, and an entire corruption of manners.

It continued thus until the 9th of June 1692, when an earthquake, which shook the whole island to its foundations, overwhelmed this city, and buried nine tenths of it eight fathom under water. This earthquake not only demolished this city, but made a terrible devastation all over the island, and was followed by a contagious distemper, which was near giving the last hand to its ruin. Ever since it is remarked, that the air is far more unwholsome than formerly.

This

This earthquake, one of the most dreadful that I think ever was known, is described in such lively colours in the Philosophical transactions, and by persons who saw and had a large part in the terrors and losses of this calamity, that I shall say nothing of it, but refer thither; as I am certain no man, from his fancy, could assemble a greater number of images of horror, than the nature of things, taught the persons who saw them, to bring together, and which are there related

very naturally and pathetically.

They rebuilt this city after the earthquake, but it was again destroyed. A terrible fire laid it in ashes about ten years after. withstanding this, the extraordinary convenience of the harbour tempted them to rebuild it once more. But in the year 1722 a hurricane, one of the most terrible on record, reduced it a third time to a heap of rubbish. Warned by these extraordinary calamities, that seemed to mark out this place as a devoted fpot, by an act of affembly they removed the cultom-house and public offices from thence, and forbid that any market should be held there for the future. The principal inhabitants came to refide at the opposite fide of the bay, at a place which is called Kingston. The town is advantageously situated for fresh water, and all manner of accommodations. The streets are of a commodious Vol. II. wideness.

hook overenths arth-, but fland, mper, nd to

ce

fo

ose

the

ced

ven

fi-

ade

two

and

reat

v to

fore

the

laces

d be

and

June

It

at the merly. This

The river Cobre, a confiderable, but not navigable stream, falls into the sea not far from Kingston. Upon the banks of this river stands St. Jago de la Vega, or Spanish-town; the feat of government, and the place where the courts of justice are held, and consequently the capital of Jamaica, though inferior in fize and refort to Kingston. However, this, though a town of less business, has more gaiety. Here reside many persons of large fortunes, and who make a figure proportionable; the number of coaches kept here is very great; here is a regular affembly; and the residence of the governor and the principal officers of the government, who have all very profitable places, conspire with the genius of the inhabitants, ostentatious and expensive, to make it a very splendid and agreeable place. Mr. Knowles, the late governor, made an attempt to remove the feat of government from hence to Kingston, for reasons which, it must be owned, have a very plaufible appearance; for it

it would certainly facilitate the carrying on of business, to have the courts of justice and the feat of government as near as possible to the center of commercial affairs. But whether the confideration of a more healthful fituation: the division of the advantages of great towns, with the feveral parts of the country, and the mischief that might arise from shaking the settled order of things, and prejudicing the property of a great many private people, can weigh against the advantages proposed by this removal, I will not undertake to determine. One thing appears, I think, very plainly in the contest which this regulation produced; that the opposition was, at least, as much to the governor as to the measure; and that great natural warmth of temper upon all fides, enflamed and envenomed by a spirit of party which reigns in all our plantations, kindled a flame about this, which, if it had not happened, must have risen to the same height upon some other occasion, since there was a plenty of combustible materials ready upon all fides.

The government of this island is, next to that of Ireland, the best in the king's gift. The standing salary is two thousand five hundred pounds a year. The assembly vote the governor as much more; and this, with the other great profits of his office, make it in the whole little inferior to ten thousand pounds a

G 2

year.

hust be e; for it

ach

It

ses,

ewo.

or a

The

e of

rnor

not from

tands

the

e the

ently

or in

this,

aiety.

tunes,

great;

idence cers of

fitable

inha-

make Mr.

ttempt

hence

84 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN year. But of the government I shall say little, until I speak of the government of the rest of the plantations, to which this is in all respects alike.

CHAP. V.

Barbadoes. Its savage condition at the first planting. The hardships suffered by the planters. The speedy increase of the island. Its great wealth and number of inhabitants. Its decline. Present state of the island.

THE next island, in point of importance, which we possess in the West-Indies, but the oldest in point of settlement, is Barbadoes. This is one, and by no means the most contemptible one, amongst the Windward division of the Caribbee islands. It is not distinctly known when this island was first discovered or settled; but it was probably some time about the year 1625.

When the English first landed here, they found the place the most savage and destitute that can well be imagined. It had not the least appearance of ever having been peopled even by savages. There was no kind of beasts of pasture or of prey, no fruit, no herb, nor root fit for supporting the life of man. Yet as the climate was good, and the soil appeared fertile, some gentlemen of small fortunes

first the

tants.

fay

the

mpor-Westment, means it the slands. island, it was

t was
t, they
estitute
not the
eopled
ind of
o herb,
f man.
he soil
f small
ortunes

fortunes in England resolved to become adventurers thither. But the first planters had not only the utter desolateness of the place, and the extreme want of provisions to struggle with, but the trees were so large, of a wood so hard and stubborn, and full of fuch great branches, that they proceeded in the clearing of the ground with a difficulty that must have worn down any ordinary patience. And even when they had tolerably cleared some little spot, the first produce it yielded for their subsistence was so small and ordinary, at the same time that their supplies from England were so slow and precarious, that nothing but the noblest courage, and a firmness which cannot receive too many praises, could have carried them through the discouragements which they met in the noblest work in the world, the cultivating and peopling a deferted part of the globe. But by degrees things were mollified; some of the trees yielded fustic for the dyers; cotton and indigo agreed well with the foil; tobacco then becoming fashionable in England answered tolerably; and the country began gradually to lay afide its favage disposition and to submit to culture.

These good appearances in America, and the storm which some time after began to gather in England, encouraged many to go over; but still the colony received no fort of encouragement from the government, which at that time understood the advantages of colonies but little; and which was besides much worse occupied in sowing those seeds of bitterness, which came afterwards so terribly to their own lips. The court took no other notice of this island than to grant it to a very unworthy and unfaithful favourite, the earl of Carlisle; which, as may be judged, proved of

no advantage to the fettlement.

However, as this colony had the hardiest breeding, and the most laborious infancy of any of our fettlements, so it was far stronger in its stamina, and grew with greater speed; and that to an height, which, if it were not proved beyond any reasonable doubt, could scarcely be For in this small island, which is believed. but twenty-five miles in length, and in breadth but fourteen, in little more than twenty years after its first settlement, that is, in 1650, it contained upwards of fifty thousand whites of all fexes and ages, and a much greater number of blacks and Indian slaves. The former of which flaves they bought; the latter they acquired by means not at all to their honour; for they seized upon those unhappy men, without any pretence, in the neighbouring islands, and carried them into flavery. A practice, which has rendered the Caribbee Indians irreconcileable to us ever fince.

This

This small island, peopled by upwards of one hundred thousand souls, was not yet above half of it cultivated, nor was the industry of the inhabitants at a stand. A little before the period I have mentioned, they learned the method of making fugar; and this enlarging the sphere of their trade, they grew prodigi-

oully rich and numerous.

About this time the government in England, which was then in the hands of Cromwell, confined the trade of Barbadoes to the mother country; before, it had been managed altogether by the Dutch. The rigour exercifed towards the royal party, obliged feveral gentlemen of very good families to settle in this island, which was far from being peopled like some other colonies, by fugitives and persons desperate at home. After the restoration it continued still to advance by very hasty strides. Not long after the restoration, king Charles created thirteen baronets from the gentlemen of this island, some of whom were worth ten thousand pounds a year, and none so little as one thousand.

In 1676, which was the meridian of this fettlement, their whites were computed to be still much about fifty thousand, but their negroe flaves were increased so as to be upwards of one hundred thousand of all kinds. They employed four hundred sail of ships, one with another of an hundred and fifty tuns, in their

G 4

trade;

dians This

ich

co-

uch

bit-

v to

very d of

d of

diest

y of

er in

and

oved y be

ch is

adth

years

o, it

es of

mber er of

y ac-

our;

with-

ands,

ctice,

trade; their annual exported produce in fugar, indigo, ginger, cotton, &c. amounted to upwards of three hundred and fifty thousand pounds, and their circulating cash at home was two hundred thousand. It is probable that Holland itself, or perhaps even the best inhabited parts of China were never peopled to the same proportion, nor have they land of the same dimensions, which produces any thing like the same profits. But since that time the island has been much upon the decline. The growth of the French sugar islands and the settlement of Antegua, St. Christopher's, Nevis, and Montserrat, as well as the greater establishment in Jamaica, have drawn away from time to time a vast number of their people. A terrible contagion, faid to be brought over by the troops from England, but more probably derived from the coast of Africa, attacked the island in the year 1692; it raged like a pestilence; twenty have died in a day in their principal town; and all parts of the island suffered in proportion. fickness continued, with some abatements, for feveral vears, and left an ill disposition in the climate ever afterwards. War raged at the fame time with this diffemper; and the Barbadiens, who raifed a good number of men, lost many of them in fruitless expeditions against the French islands. The land too began not to yield quite fo kindly as it formerly had fu-

d to

fand

ome

a'sle

best

pled

nd of

any

that

1 the

fugar

, St.

well

have

mber

aid to

rland,

ast of

692;

ied in

parts

This

ts, for

in the

at the

e Bar-

men,

itions

bo be-

merly

had

had done, and in some places they were obliged to manure it. All these causes contributed to reduce the numbers and opulence of this celebrated island. But it is only in comparison of itself, that it may be considered in any other than the most flourishing condition even at this day; for even now it contains twenty-five thousand whites, very near eighty thousand negroes, and it ships above twentyfive thousand hogsheads of sugar, to the value of three hundred thousand pounds, besides rum, molasses, cotton, ginger, and aloes; an immense peopling and produce for a country not containing more than one hundred thoufand acres of land. By the rife of fugars, the returns of this island are little less than they were in its most flourishing times.

This island can raise near five thousand men of its own militia, and it has generally a regiment of regular troops, though not very compleat. It is fortified by nature all along the windward shore by the rocks and shoals, fo as to be near two thirds utterly inaccessible. On the leeward fide it has good harbours; but the whole coast is protected by a line of feveral miles in length, and feveral forts to

defend it at the most material places.

They support their own establishment, which is very considerable, with great credit. The governor's place is worth at least five thousand pounds a year, and the rest of their officers

officers have valuable appointments. provide very handsomely for their clergy, who are of the church of England, which is the religion established here, as it is in the other islands. Here are very few dissenters. There is in general an appearance of something more of order and decency, and of a fettled people, than in any other colony in the West-Indies. They have here a college, founded and well endowed by the virtue and liberality of that great man colonel Christopher Codrington, who was a native of this illand, and who for a great number of amiable and useful qualities both in public and private life, for his courage, and the zeal for the good of his country, his humanity, his knowledge and love of literature, was far the richest production and most shining ornament this island ever had.

This college does not so fully answer the intentions of the excellent founder, as it might do. If the fund was applied to the education of a number of catechists for the instruction of the negroes, some of them of their own colour, it would be a vast public advantage, besides the charity, or perhaps the indispensable

duty of some such work.

This college is in Bridge-town, the capital of this island, which, before the late fire, contained about twelve hundred houses, very handsomely built and inhabited by a numerous and wealthy people. The country of Barbadoes

does has a most beautiful appearance, swelling here and there into gentle hills; shining by the cultivation of every part, by the verdure of the fugar canes, the bloom and fragrance of the number of orange, lemon, lime, and citron trees, the guavas, papas, aloes, and a vast multitude of other elegant and useful plants, that rife intermixed with the houses of the gentlemen which are fown thickly on every part of the island. Even the negroe huts, though mean, contribute to the beauty of the country; for they shade them with plantain trees, which give their villages the appearance of fo many beautiful groves. In short, there is no place in the West-Indies comparable to Barbadoes, in point of numbers of people, cultivation of the foil, and those elegancies and conveniencies which refult from both.

CHAP. VI.

St. Christopher, Antegua, Nevis, Montserrat; their present condition and force.

HE island of St. Christopher's is the chief of those which we possess amongst the Leeward islands. It was first settled by the French and English in the year 1626, but after various fortunes it was entirely ceded to us by the treaty of Utrecht. This island is

about

hfable apital convery erous arbadoes

hey

vho

the

ther

e of

ple,

lies.

well

that

ton,

o for

lities

cou-

ntry,

lite-

most

r the night

ation

on of

h cobe-

about seventy-five miles in compass. circuit of Antegua is but little inferior. Nevis and Montserrat are the smallest of the four, not exceeding for either of them about eighteen or twenty miles in circumference. The foil in all these islands is pretty much alike; light and fandy, but notwithstanding fertile in an high degree. Antegua has no rivulets of fresh water, and but very few springs; this made it be deemed uninhabitable for a long time; but now they fave the rains in ponds and cifterns with great care, and they are rarely in great distress for water. In a word, this island, which we formerly thought useless, has got the start of all the Leeward islands, increasing every day in its produce and inhabitants both freemen and flaves. It has one of the best harbours in the West-Indies; on it stands the principal town called St. John's, which is large and wealthy.

The island of St. Christopher's is not so much on the increase. Neither that nor any of the Leeward islands yields any commodity of consequence but what is derived from the cane, except Montserrat, which exports some

indigo, but of a very inferior kind.

It is judged that the island of St. Christopher's contains about seven thousand whites and twenty thousand negroes; that Antegua has also about seven thousand of the former colour and thirty thousand blacks; and that Nevis Nevis and Montserrat may have each about five thousand Europeans, who are the masters of ten or twelve thousand African slaves. So that the whole of the Leeward islands may be reckoned without exaggeration to maintain about twenty thousand English, of whom every single man gives bread to several in England, which is effected by the labour of near seventy thousand negroes. Of the island of Barbuda I say little, because it has no direct trade with England. It is employed in husbandry, and raising fresh provisions for the use of the neighbouring colonies. It is the property of the Codrington family.

n

is

is

S,

s,

a-

ne

ng

fo

hy

ty

he ne

otes ua

nat vis These islands are under the management of one governor, who has the title of captain general and governor in chief of all the Caribbee islands from Guadaloupe to Porto Rico. His post is worth about three thousand five hundred pounds a year. Under him each island has its particular deputy governor at a salary of two hundred pounds a year, and its feparate, independent legislative of a council,

and an affembly of the representatives.

CHAP. VII.

Climate of the W.st-Indies. The rains and winds. Hurricanes. Their prognostics. Produce of the West-Indies. Sugar. The manner of manufacturing it. Planters in the West-Indies. Their way of life and management of their affairs. The Negroes.

HE climate in all our West-Indiaislands is nearly the fame, allowing for those ccidental differences which the feveral fituations and qualities of the lands themselves produce. As they lie within the tropic, and that the fun goes quite over their heads, pasfing beyond them to the north, and never retires further from any of them than about 30 degrees to the South, they are continually subjected to the extreme of an heat, which would be intolerable, if the trade wind rifing gradually as the fun gathers strength did not blow in upon them from the sea, and refresh the air in fuch a manner as to enable them to attend their concerns even under the meridian fun. On the other hand, as the night advances, a breeze begins to be perceived, which blows fmartly from the land, as it were from its center, towards the sea, to all points of the compass at once.

By the same remarkable providence in the disposing of things it is, that, when the sun has made a great progress towards the tropic of Cancer and becomes in a manner vertical, he draws after him such a vast body of clouds as shield them from his direct beams; and dissolving into rain, cool the air and refresh the country, thirsty with the long drought, which commonly reigns from the beginning of January to the letter and of Man.

ary to the latter end of May.

The rains in the West-Indies are by no means the things they are with us. Our heaviest rains are but dews comparatively. They are rather floods of water poured from the clouds with a prodigious impetuofity; the rivers rife in a moment; new rivers and lakes are formed, and in a short time all the low country is under water. Hence it is, that the rivers which have their fource within the tropics swell and overflow their banks at a certain feason; and so mistaken were the ancients in their idea of the torrid zone, which they imagined to be dried and fcorched up with a continual and fervent heat, and to be for that reason uninhabitable; when in reality fome of the largest rivers in the world have their course within its limits, and the moisture is one of the greatest inconveniencies of the climate in feveral places.

The rains make the only distinction of seasons in the West-Indies; the trees are green

the

Ву

nd

ro-

272-

the

ge-

nds

ose

ua-

ves

and

pal-

re-

1 30

nich

fing

not

resh

n to

dian

ad-

hich

from

f the

the whole year round; they have no cold, no frosts, no snows, and but rarely some hail; the storms of hail are however very violent when they happen, and the hailstones very great and heavy. Whether it be owing to this moisture alone, which alone does not seem to be a sufficient cause, or to a greater quantity of a sulphurous acid, which predominates in the air in this country, metals of all kinds that are subject to the action of such causes rust and canker in a very short time; and this cause, perhaps as much as the heat itself, contributes to make the climate of the West-Indies unfriendly and unpleasant to an European constitution.

It is in the rainy feason (principally in the month of August, more rarely in July and September) that they are assaulted by hurricanes; the most terrible calamity to which they are subject from the climate; this destroys at a stroke the labours of many years and prostrates the most exalted hopes of the planter, and often just at the moment when he thinks himfelf out of the reach of fortune. It is a fudden and violent storm of wind, rain, thunder, and lightening, attended with a furious swelling of the feas and fometimes with an earthquake; in short, with every circumstance which the elements can affemble that is terrible and destructive. First, they see as the prelude to the ensuing havock whole fields of sugar canes whirled into the air, and scattered over 10

he

en

nd

ire

1f-

ul-

in:

ect

ker

aps

ake

and

the

and

ırri-

they

at a

rates

l of-

nim-

dden

and

ng of

ake:

h the

and

elude

fugar

over

the

the face of the country. The strongest trees of the forest are torn up by the roots, and driven about like stubble; their windmills are swept away in a moment; their works, the fixtures, the ponderous copper boilers, and stills of several hur dred weight, are wrenched from the ground, and battered to pieces: their houses are no protection, the roofs are torn off at one blast; whilst the rain, which in an hour rises five feet, rushes in upon them with an irresistible violence.

There are figns, which the Indians of these islands taught our planters, by which they can prognosticate the approach of an hurricane. The hurricane comes on either in the quarters, or at the full change of the moon. If it comes at the full moon, when you are at the change observe these signs. you will fee the fky very turbulent; you will observe the fun more red than at other times; you will perceive a dead calm, and the hills clear of all those clouds and mists which usually hover about them. In the clefts of the earth, and in the wells, you hear a hollow rumbling found like the rushing of a great wind. At night the stars seem much larger than usual, and surrounded with a fort of burs; the North-west sky has a black and menacing look; the fea emits a strong smell, and rifes into vast waves, often without any wind; the wind itself now forfakes its usual steady Easter-VOL. II. H lу

The grand staple commodity of the West-Indies is sugar; this commodity was not at all known to the Greeks and Romans, though it was made in China in very early times, from

whence

whence we had the first knowledge of it; but the Portuguese were the first who cultivated it in America, and brought it into request as one of the materials of a very universal luxury in Europe. It is not fettled whether the cane from which this substance is extracted be a native of America, or brought thither by the Portuguese from India and the coast of Africa; but, however the matter may be, in the beginning they made the most as they still do the best sugars, which come to market in this part of the world. The fugar cane grows to the height of between fix and eight feet, full of joints, about four or five inches afunder; the colour of the body of the cane is yellowish, and the top, where it shoots into leaves, of a vivid green; the coat is pretty hard, and within contains a spungy substance full of a juice, the most lively, elegant, and least cloying fweet in nature; and which, fucked raw, has proved extremely nutritive and wholfome.

They are cultivated in this manner. In the month of August, that is, in the rainy part of the year, after the ground is cleared and well hoed, they lay a piece of fix or seven joints of the cane, flat in a channel made for it, above half a foot deep; this they cover with the earth, and so plant the whole field in lines regularly disposed and at proper distances. In a short time a young cane shoots out from every joint of the stock which was interred;

H 2 and

Westat all ugh it from thence

m

ns

ırs

ull

ıd-

un

ics

eral

ple

ers

ules

ing

nce

adi-

the

but

nge,

ne to

ugh,

nany

uses.

ected

erati.

ect as

this

udges

100 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

and grows in twelve days to be a pretty tall and vigorous plant; but it is not until after fixteen months, or thereabouts, that the canes are fit to answer the purposes of the planter, though they may remain a few months after without any confiderable prejudice to him. The longer they remain in the ground after they are come to maturity, the less juice they afford; but this is somewhat compensated by the superior richness of the juice. That no time may be loft, they generally divide their cane-grounds into three parts. One is of standing canes, and to be cut that season; the fecond is of new-planted canes; and the third is fallow, ready to receive a fresh supply. fome places they make fecond and third cuttings from the same root. The tops of the canes, and the leaves which grow upon the joints, make very good provender for their cattle, and the refuse of the cane after grinding ferves for fire; fo that no part of this excellent plan is without its use.

The canes are cut with a billet, and carried in bundles to the mill, which is now generally a windmill; it turns three great cylinders or rollers plated with iron fet perpendicularly and cogged fo as to be all moved by the middle roller. Between these the canes are bruised to pieces, and the juice runs through an hole into a vat which is placed under the rollers to receive it; from hence it is carried

through

tall

fter

nes

ter,

fter

im.

ifter

they

d by

t no

their

s of

the

third

cut-

of the

n the

their

rind-

s ex-

arried

heral-

nders

ılarly

mid-

bruif-

rh an

the

rried

ough

In

through a pipe into a great refervoir, in which however, for fear of turning four, it is not fuffered to rest long; but is conveyed out of that by other pipes into the boiling house, where it is received by a large cauldron: here it remains, until the fcum, which constantly arises during the boiling, is all taken off; from this, it is passed successively into five or fix more boilers, gradually diminishing in their size, and treated in the same manner. In the last of these it becomes of a very thick clammy confistence; but mere boiling is incapable of carrying it further: to advance the operation, they pour in a small quantity of lime-water; the immediate effect of this alien mixture is, to raise up the liquor in a very vehement fermentation; but, to prevent it from running over, a bit of butter no larger than a nut is thrown in, upon which the fury of the fermentation immediately subsides; a vessel of two or three hundred gallons requires no greater force to quiet it. It is now taken out and placed in a cooler, where it dries, granulates, and becomes fit to be put into the pots, which is the last part of the operation.

The pots are conical, or of a fugar-loaf fashion; open at the point, which must be considered as their bottom; here a strainer is put across. In these pots the sugar purges itself of its remaining impurity; the molasses or treacly part disentangles itself from the rest;

H 3

102 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

precipitates and runs out of the aperture at the bottom; it is now in the condition called muscavado sugar, of a yellowish brown colour, and thus it is generally put into the hogshead

and shipped off.

But when they have a mind to refine it yet further, and leave no remains at all of the molasses, they cover the pots I have just mentioned with a fort of white clay, like that used for tobacco pipes, diluted with water; this penetrates the fugar, unites with the molasses, and with them runs off, leaving the sugar of a whitish colour, but whitest at top. This is called clayed fugar; the operation is fometimes repeated once or twice more, and the fugar every time diminishing in quantity gains confiderably in value; but still is called clayed fugar. Further than this they do not go in the plantations, because an heavy duty of fixteen shillings per hundred weight is laid upon all fugars refined there; it is therefore not to my purpose to carry the account any further.

Of the molasses rum is made, in a manner that needs no description, since it dissers in nothing from the manner of distilling any other spirit. From the scummings of the sugar, a meaner spirit is procured. Rum finds its market in North America (where it is consumed by the English inhabitants, or employed in the Indian trade, or distributed from thence to the sishery of Newfoundland, and the Afri-

mes ugar conayed o in

f fixupon ot to her.

anner n noother gar, a marfumed

yed in hence African can commerce); besides what comes to England and Ireland. However, a very great quantity of molasses is taken off raw and carried to New England to be distilled there.

They compute that, when things are well managed, the rum and molasses pay the charges of the plantation, and the fugars are clear again. However, by the particulars we have feen, and by others which we may eafily imagine, the expences of a plantation in the West-!ndies are very great, and the profits at the first view precarious; for the chargeable articles of the windmill, the boiling, cooling, and distilling houses, and the buying and subfifting a fuitable number of flaves and cattle, will not fuffer any man to begin a fugar plantation of any consequence, not to mention the purchase of the land, which is very high, under a capital of at least five thousand pounds. Neither is the life of a planter a life of idleness and luxury; at all times he must keep a watchful eye upon his overfeers, and even overfee himself occasionally. But at the boiling season, if he is properly attentive to his affairs, no way of life can be more laborious, and more dangerous to the health; from a constant attendance day and night in the extreme united heats of the climate and fo many fierce furnaces; add to this the losses by hurricanes, earthquakes, and bad seasons; and then H 4

104 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

consider, when the sugars are in the cask, that he quits the hazard of a planter, to engage in the hazards of a merchant, and ships his produce at his own risk. The sum of all might make one believe, that it could never answer to engage in this business; but, notwithstanding all this, there are no parts of the world, in which great estates are made in so short a time as in the West-Indies. The produce of a few good seasons will provide against the ill effects of the worst; as the planter is sure of a speedy and profitable market for his produce, which has a readier sale than perhaps any other commodity in the world.

Large plantations are generally under the care of a manager or chief overfeer, who has commonly a falary of a hundred and fifty pounds a year, with overfeers under him in proportion to the greatness of the plantation, one to about thirty negroes, and at the rate of about forty pounds. Such plantations too have a furgeon at a fixed falary employed to take care of the negroes which belong to it. the course which is the least troublesome to the owner of the estate is, to let the land, with all the works and the flock of cattle and flaves, to a tenant, who gives fecurity for the payment of the rent and the keeping up repairs and the stock. The estate is generally estimated to such a tenant at half the neat produce of the best

best years. Such tenants, if industrious and frugal men, soon make good estates for themfelves.

The negroes in the plantations are subsisted at a very easy rate. This is generally by alloting to each family of them a small portion of land, and allowing them two days in the week, Saturday and Sunday, to cultivate it; some are subsisted in this manner, but others find their negroes themselves with a certain portion of Guinea or Indian corn, and to some a salt herring, or a small quantity of bacon or salt pork a day. All the rest of the charge consists in a cap, a shirt, a pair of breeches, stockings and shoes; the whole not exceeding forty shillings a year.

To particularife the commodities proper for the West-India market, would be to enumerate all the necessaries, conveniencies, and luxuries of life; for they have nothing of their own but the commodities I have already mentioned. Traders there make a very large profit upon all they sell; and all kind of handicraftsmen, especially carpenters, bricklayers, and brasiers, get very great encourage-

ment.

at

in

0-

ht

/er

.dld,

t a

of

ill

ot a

ce,

any

the has

ifty

1 111

on,

e of

nave

take

But

e to

with wes,

nent and ated f the

best

CHAP. VIII.

Observations on the settlement of the West-Indies. Advantages there for tempers prejudicial at home. Bad tempers not always noxious in every sense.

HE disposition to industry has a variety of characters and in ty of characters, and is by no means constantly of the same colour. Some acquiesce in a moderate labour through the whole of their lives, attended with no risk either to their persons or their gains; such sort of people, who form the best citizens in general, are fit to stay at home. Others, full as remote from an indolent disposition, are of quite a different character. These are fiery, restless tempers, willing to undertake the feverest labour, provided it promises but a short continuance, who love risk and hazard, whose schemes are always vait, and who put no medium between being great and being undone. Characters of this fort, especially when they happen in low and middling life, are often dangerous members in a regular and fettled community. But the West-Indies open a fair and ample field to encourage persons of fuch a disposition; and it may be reckoned one very great benefit of our possessions in that part of the world, that, besides the vast quantities

feamen that they employ, and our revenues that they support, they are a vent to carry off fuch spirits, whom they keep occupied greatly to the public benefit. Our dominions are fo circumstanced, and afford such a variety, that all dispositions to business, of what kind foever, may have exercise without presfing upon one another. It is besides a great happiness, that unfortunate men, whom unavoidable accidents, the frowns of the world, or the cruelty of creditors, would have rendered miserable to themselves, and useless to the public, may find a fort of afylum, where at last they often succeed so well, as to have reafon to bless those accidents, which drove them from their country poor, deserted, and despised, to return them to it in opulence and credit. Of fuch a change every one can produce many instances of his own knowledge; as whoever looks about him cannot rail to fee a great number of persons, who, having taken wrong steps in the beginning of their lives, have established such a character of weakness

and imprudence, as prevents them ever after

from being trusted or employed, wherever

they are at all known, although their charac-

ters should be altogether changed and the

passions quite subsided which gave occasion

to their errors. Such persons become, first,

iys

ie-

ıns

ıi-

ole

to

:0-

al,

ote

a

eſs

est

n-

ofe

no

ın-

en

are

et-

en

of

ned

hat

ın-

ies

indigent, then desperate, and at last, abandoned:

ed; but when they have an opportunity of going where this prejudice does not operate against them, they set up as new men. With the advantage of an experience acquired by their mistakes, they are free from the ill reputation which attended them; and they prove of vast service to their country, to which they could be of no advantage whilst they remained in it. There are persons too, far more blameable than either of the former forts, who, having erred without proper caution in points of morality, are deservedly regarded with distrust and abhorrence, though they may be at bottom far from being utterly abandoned; and are still, excepting their character, the stuff proper for making very good men of the world.

These are the several forts of people, who, with very sew exceptions, have settled the West-Indies, and North-America in a good measure. And thus have we drawn from the rashness of hot and visionary men; the imprudence of youth; the corruption of bad morals; and even from the wretchedness and misery of persons destitute and undone; the great source of our wealth, our strength, and our power. And, though this was neither the effect of our wisdom, nor the consequence of our foresight; yet, having happened, it may tend to give us more wisdom and a better foresight; for it will undoubtedly be a standing

h

y

1-

ve

y

1-

re

0,

its

th

be

d;

he

of

no,

he

 \mathbf{bod}

the

m-

bad

ind

the

and

the

nay

ter

nding ing monitor to us, how much we ought to cherish the colonies we have already established, by every encouragement in our power, and by every reasonable indulgence; and it will be an additional spur to make us active in the acquisition of new ones: since experience has taught us, that, as there is no foil or climate which will not shew itself grateful to culture, so that there is no disposition, no character in mankind, which may not be turned with dextrous management to the public advantage. Those rulers, who make complaints of the temper of their people in almost any respect, ought rather to lament their own want of genius, which blinds them to the use of an instrument purposely put into their hands by Providence, for effecting perhaps the greatest things. There are humours in the body, which, contained, may be noxious to it, yet which, fent abroad, are the proper materials for generating new bodies. dence, and a great minister who should imitate Providence, often gain their ends by means that feem most contrary to them; for earthquakes, and hurricanes, and floods, are as necessary to the well-being of things, as calm and fun-shine; life and beauty are drawn from death and corruption; and the most efficacious medicines are often found united with the most deadly poisons. This, as it is well known, is the order of nature, and perhaps 110 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN it might not unwifely be confidered as an example for government.

CHAP. IX.

Observations on taxing the colonies. On an expensive establishment there. Objections answered.

HOUGH we have drawn fuch great advantages from our possessions in the West-Indies, and are, even in our present way of acting, likely to continue to draw still more; and though we have not wholly neglected the culture of that useful province; yet fome will think there are fome things yet left undone, some things in which our neighbours have fet us a laudable example, and some others which the inconveniencies we have felt from the want of them demonstrate to be necessary to ourselves. But it is not my purpose to handle this subject in its full extent, fince it is the wisdom and power of the legislature, and not the unauthorized speculations of a private man, which can effect any thing useful in this way. A West-Indian, who is naturally warm in his temper, and not too fervilely obedient to the rules of the bienseance, might find some faults in our proceedings here, and would perhaps reason in a manner not unlike the following. " One

"One would think, from some instances, that, at the distance we are placed from the feat of authority, we were too remote to enjoy its protection, but not to feel its weight. Innumerable are the grievances which have oppressed us from our infancy, and which contribute to bring on us a premature old age. Not one of the least evils under which our plantations in the West-Indies groan, is the support of an expensive civil establishment, suited rather to an established and independent country in the plenitude of wealth and power, than to newly fettled colonies, to which nobody thinks himself to belong as to his country, and which struggle with a total want of almost all the necessaries and conveniencies of life. The building and maintaining of the public works and fortifications, is a weight to which we are totally unequal, and the laying of which upon our shoulders is directly contrary to the very purpose for which you cultivate the colonies; for, though the produce of these colonies is in general to be confidered as a luxury, yet is it of the greatest value to you; first, as it supplies you with things, which, if not from us, you must certainly take from foreign nations. Even in this view the colonies are extremely useful. But there is another, and a much more advantageous light in which you may view them; you may confider them as they supply you with a commodity which you export to other

nce, ere, un-

e

ıy

et

eft

ırs

me

elt

ne-

ur-

nt,

gif-

ons

ing

o is

ſer-

One

112 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

other countries, and which helps to bring the

balance of trade in your favour.

The whole fecret of managing a foreign market is contained in two words, to have the commodity of a good kind, and to fell it cheap; and the whole domestic policy of trade confifts in contriving to answer these two ends, and principally the latter. Now, by what magic can we effect to fell as cheap as the French at any foreign market, when our planters pay four and a half per cent. duty upon all the fugars, which they ship off in America, and this after having had the fame commodity in effect heavily taxed before by the poll on the negroes which work it, and by other impositions, which the planters endure according to the exigencies of the government? when the French planter pays a very infignificant poll-tax at worst, and not one per cent. duty upon all the fugars he exports; when he buys his negroes at an easier rate than we can do; when he is more favoured upon every occasion, and is besides of a temper more industrious and frugal, than is found in our people. Besides this, upon sudden emergencies, we run very much in debt; the island of Barbadoes at one stroke expended thirty thousand pounds upon a fortification, to fay nothing of what this and what other islands have done in the fame way and upon fimilar occasions? We are in reality only your factors; you in England ought to confider yourselves

113

as the merchants, who should be at the whole expence, and should willingly abide by whatfoever loss accrues; fince the profits are all your own, and fince in the end, by the course of trade, the loss too, let you take what shifting measures you please to avoid it, and to cheat yourselves with appearances. It is reafonable that you should lay what duty you please upon what is consumed amongst yourfelves, because you govern that market as you please; but what you charge, or suffer to be charged, on the islands, is only the price of your own goods inhanced fo much at the foreign market; there you have no exclusive privilege, and there you are fure to fuffer. If that duty which is laid in England upon the produce of our islands, or even half of it, were expended, as in reason it ought, for the support of our establishment, we might well be freed from the heavy burdens which we bear, and consequently might be somewhat upon a par with our neighbours. In our prefent condition, we not only pay very ample falaries to our governors, but they are besides fuffered to make the most they can, by management, of our weakness, to cheat us into voluntary gratuities, which we have given often without a due confideration of our circumstances. This custom prompts our governors to use a thousand arts, equally unbecoming their character and prejudicial to the provinces Vol. II.

elves as

hc

ign

the

ap;

on-

ids,

na-

nch

pay

· fu-

this

ffect

roes

hich

gen-

olan-

orft,

igars

nt an

nore

es of

an is

fad-

lebt;

nded

n, to

lands

nilar

tors;

114 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

they govern. It is this which induces them to foment those divisions which tear us to pieces; and which prevent us from attending seriously and entirely to what will best advance

the prosperity of our settlements.

It were a tedious and disagreeable task, to run through all the mischiefs, of which that one error of sending a governor to make the most he can of us is the fruitful source. The governor, I allow, ought to have every where a certain, reasonable, and even a gentcel salary; but then, when he has this, he ought not to be in a condition to hope for any thing further, and ought to consider nothing but how he may best perform the duty of his office.

But I hear it objected, that we are already extremely chargeable to England, who fends her troops to protect us, and her fleets to cover our trade, at a very preat expence, for which we ought to be contented, and even thankful; and that it is unreasonable to expect she should bear every part of our burden, loaded as she is with the weight of a vast national debt, and a most expensive establishment of her own. But to this my answer is short, plain, and practical. The French do all this. They fend armies and fleets to protect their colonies as well as you; but they fupport the establishment in their own plantations notwithstanding; and they are far from suppoling

posing this an insupportable burden. They know that a little judicious expence is often the best occonomy in the world, and that in this case, it is only sparing their own subjects in the West-Indies, and levying the money laid out for their use upon the foreign consumer. What they do, I see no impossibility of They learned many of their maxour doing. ims of trade, as well as many of the fabrics which supply it, from us; I wish we would learn from them in our turn. We have, indeed, some years ago eased the trade, by permitting ships from the islands to carry our produce out directly to foreign markets; but still it is so clogged, that we do not feel all the benefit which we might expect from a more general and better regulated liberty.

Not to carry our enquiries further, see what you have gained by prohibiting us to land our sugars directly in Ireland, before they are first entered in an English port. What was the consequence? why your sugars grew dear by this loading and unloading, and passing backward and forward. The Portuguese offered sugars of at least equal goodness, and at a much more moderate price. The merchants in Ireland would not refuse so good an offer out of a compliment to you, who in this instance paid them no compliment at all; and you cannot, for very good reasons, dispute with the Portuguese about it: If this has happen-

I 2

ed

eady ends s to , for even exden, vait llishver is h do otect suptions lupofing

m

to

ng

ce

to

nat

the

he

cre

ılaght

ing

but

his

116 An Account of the European

ed at home, the consequence must be infinitely worse abread. But it is said that our failures abroad are only owing to this; that we have not ground enough conveniently fituated to produce more fugars than fatisfies the home demand. But this is far enough from the case. There is in several of the islands, but there is in Jamaica in particular, a great quantity of good land, and well enough fituated too, if means were taken to bring it into culture, and a choice of markets to animate the planter in the cultivation; who certainly deserves every fort of encouragement, as he asks for nothing but to be put into such a condition, as may enable him to be of more fervice to his mother country."

CHAP. X.

State of the negroes in the West-Indies. Danger from them. Methods proposed for remedying these abuses. The necessity of increasing the whites. Use of this regulation in trade.

N the foregoing manner the West-Indian would state some part of what he conceives to be his grievances; and those I believe he would be earnest enough to have remedied. But there are other regulations, which a person not concerned in their affairs might think very proper too, but which the West-

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. West-Indian would enter into with a much

greater degree of phlegm.

There are now allowed to be in our West-Indies, at least, two hundred and thirty thoufand negro flaves; and it is allowed too that, upon the highest calculation, the whites there, in all, do not amount to ninety thousand souls. This disproportion shews so clearly at the first glance how much the colonies are endangered, both from within and without; how much exposed to the assaults of a foreign enemy, and to the infurrection of their own flaves (which latter circumstance in all our islands keeps the people in perpetual apprehensions), that it may be a just cause of surprize, that no measures whatsoever are taken to correct this dangerous irregularity.

This disproportion between the freemen and negroes grows more visible every day. That enterprising spirit, which the novelty of the object and various concurrent causes had produced in the last century, has decayed very much. We have as many men indigent and unemployed at home as we had then; but they have not the same spirit and activity they had at that time. The disposition of the people in the West-Indies concurs with that of our people at home, to increase and perpetuate the evil of which I complain; for they chuse to do every thing by negroes, which can possibly be done by them; and though they have

hdian con-I behave tions. ffairs h the West-

fi-

ur lat

tly

fies.

igh

the

lar,

ıgh

git

anicer-

t, as

ch a

nore

inger

dying

the

118 An Account of the European

laws and ordinances to oblige them to keep a certain number of white fervants in some proportion to their blacks, in most places these laws are but a dead letter. They find it more easy to pay the penalty, when seldom it is exacted, than to comply with the law. avarice in these particulars make them blind to the hazards to which they expose the sum total of their affairs. This disposition in the planters is now almost grown inveterate, and to fuch a degree, that the remedy will probably never be administered by themselves; and if this disposition continues, in a little time (which is indeed nearly the case already), all the English in our colonies there will consist of little more than a few planters and merchants; and the rest will be a despicable, though a dangerous, because a numerous and disaffected, herd of African slaves.

Indubitably the fecurity, as well as the folid wealth of every nation, confifts principally in the number of low and middling men of a free condition, and that beautiful gradation from the highest to the lowest, where the transitions all the way are almost imperceptible. To produce this ought to be the aim and mark of every well-regulated commonwealth, and none has ever flourished upon other principles. But when we consider the colony out of that independent light, and as it is related to Great Britain, it is clear that this neglect

neglect is of great detriment to the mother country; because it is certain, that the confumption of our commodities there would be in a great measure in proportion to the number of white men; and there is nobody at all acquainted with the plantations, who will not readily allow, that, when I say one white man takes off as much of our manufactures as three negroes, I estimate his value to us at a very low rate.

ro-

ese

ore

ex-

neir

d to

the

and

ba-

and

, all

ft of

ints;

gh a

cted,

e fo-

pally

of a

ation

the

epti-

h and

alth,

other

plony

it is

t this

But the necessity of having there a proper number of whites is not only strongly enforced by the confideration of the great gain which would from thence accrue to us, but from the vast savings which such an arrangement would produce. The militia of the West-Indies is exceedingly well trained, so as to be in discipline not very much inferior, but in courage and spirit beyond, most regular troops; and they really want nothing but fufficient numbers to be able fully to defend themselves, and occasionally to annoy the enemy; for both which purposes they are infinitely more fit, by being habituated to the climate, than raw troops, which in this part of the world can never meet the enemy in the field with much more than half their complement. A less number of troops would do there in all times, if this point was well studied; and I may venture to say, that the transporting and comfortably providing for a proper

120 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

proper number of men effectually to fecure our colonies, and even to make any attempt upon them desperate, would not have cost the government one third part of the money, which for these twenty years past has been expended in the transporting and maintaining of troops there, who die and waste away without any benesit to themselves or their country; whereas these settlers, who would so effectually intimidate a foreign enemy, and take away all hope of liberty from the negroes, would all the while be enriching their mother country, and paying a large interest for the sums she expended in their establishment.

I am conscious that many objections will be made against the very proposal, and that many more would be started against any effectual scheme for increasing the number of white fervants in the West-Indies. They are represented, as of very little use, disorderly, idle, drunken, and fitter to pervert the negroes, than to be any affistance to them in their business. This I believe to be in general true; but this is no fort of objection to having them; though it is an excellent argument for putting them, their masters, and the whole colony, under a better regulation. If we labour under great inconveniencies from the want of a police at home, this want is infinitely more visible in the West-Indies, where, for the most part, they all live without the least sense of religion,

ure

npt

cost

ey,

cen

ing

way

heir

ould

and

ne-

heir

t for

ent.

will

that

v ef-

er of

v are

lerly,

roes,

bufi-

true;

nem;

tting

lony,

under

bolice

ifible

part,

gion,

117

121

in a state of vice and debauchery, which is really deplorable to consider them as men and christians, and of a very bad aspect in a political light. If therefore it should be thought convenient by the wisdom of our government, at any time to enter into a scheme for peopling these countries fully and properly, it will be equally convenient at the same time to take fuch strict measures as may preserve them from vice and idleness; a thing far enough from being impracticable. Whenever fuch regulations shall take place, they will in a good measure answer another end too, the preserving the health and lives of the people; a point, which in all places every wife government will have very much at heart; but which is, above all, necessary in a colony, where the people are an inestimable treasure, and where the climate itself is sufficiently fatal.

These observations principally regard Jamaica, the largest and best of our islands, where there are prodigious tracts of uncultivated land. As the rivers there are not navigable, and as sugar is a bulky commodity which cannot afford to pay for a very long land carriage, the coasts, or only the land very near the coasts, can be turned to that commodity. But, if poor people were sufficiently encouraged to settle in the inland parts, necessity would oblige them to raise cotton, cacao, cossee, ginger, aloes, allspice, the dying

woods,

woods, and other things, which require no vast labour, are not so burdensome in carriage, and which have all a sufficient demand at home to encourage people who do not look to great and sudden fortunes. And as we bring all these, especially the cotton, which is of great use in our manufactures, from abroad, we might encourage the raifing more of it by some moderate premium. The fame necessity too would oblige them to try experiments on cochineal, and various other things which we don't now think of, and which the climate would not refuse. degrees, and with good management, they would improve in the culture of many of these articles in which they are now defective; the careful would grow tolerably rich; and confiderable works of many valuable commodities, as cacao, cochineal, and even indigo, may be attempted with small capitals. Excepting the labour, I don't know that any of these require above two or three hundred pounds to begin with. So that, whilst the great stocks and the lands convenient to navigation are employed in fugars, the small capitals and the inland might be employed in the less expensive, though not less useful, articles I have mentioned; every part would flourish, and agriculture would have its share with the other improvements; so that the great number might be subsisted at less expence

no

IT-

nd

ot

as

n,

es,

ng

'he

try

her

and

By

hey

ot

ve;

and

no-

igo,

Ex-

an**y** Ired

the

to

mall

yed

ful,

buld

hare

the

ex-

pence than the few are now maintained. All this, I am confident, could be effected for twenty thousand pounds, or less, properly laid out; and the island by this means be rendered in a few years three times more beneficial to us, than it is at present. By the neglect of fome encouragement of this kind, the great stocks, and the running into a staple which required them, have by degrees devoured the island. It is the nature of vast stocks to create a fort of monopoly; and it is the nature of monopoly to aim at great profits from a comparatively little produce; but diffuse business, and by bringing it within the compass of several, you will make them fit down each with a fmall profit, for all cannot hope a fortune, but the joint produce of all will be very considerable. Indigo was once very greatly produced in Jamaica, and it enriched the island to so great a degree, that in the parish of Vere, where this drug was cultivated, they are faid to have had no less than three hundred gentlemen's coaches; a number I do not imagine even the whole island exceeds at this day; and there is great reason to believe, that there were many more persons of property in Jamaica formerly than are there now, though perhaps they had not those vast fortunes, which dazzle us in such a manner at present.

CHAP. XI.

Misery of the negroes. Great waste of them. Methods of preventing it. Instruction of negroes in religion.

SINCE I have indulged myself so long in a speculation, which appears to me very material to the welfare of these colonies, I shall venture to say something surther concerning another part of the inhabitants, though it may perhaps meet no warm reception from those who are the most nearly concerned.

The negroes in our colonies endure a flavery more compleat, and attended with far worse circumstances, than what any people in their condition suffer in any other part of the world, or have suffered in any other period of time. Proofs of this are not wanting. The prodigious waste which we experience in this unhappy parts of our species, is a full and melancholy evidence of this truth. The island of Barbadoes (the negroes upon which do not amount to eighty thousand) notwithstanding all the means which they use to increase them by propagation, notwithstanding that the climate is in every respect, except that of being more wholesome, exactly resembling the climate from whence they come; notwithstanding all this, Barbadoes lies under

a necei-

a necessity of an annual recruit of five thoufand flaves to keep up the stock at the number I have mentioned. This prodigious failure, which is at least in the same proportion in all our islands, shews demonstratively that fome uncommon and infi portable hardship lies upon the negroes which wears them down in fuch a furprifing manner; and this, I imagine, is principally the excessive labour which they undergo. For previously, I suppose, that none of the inhabitants of the countries between the tropics are capable, even in their own climates, of near so much labour, without great prejudice to them, as our people are in But in our plantations the blacks work severely for five days, without any relaxation or intermission, for the benefit of the master, and the other two days they are obliged to labour for their own fubfishence during the rest of the week; and this, I imagine, with the other circumstances of great severity which depress their spirits, naturally cuts off great numbers, as well as disqualifies those who remain from supplying this waste by natural propagation.

n-

gh

om

Na-

far

e in

the

d of

The

this

me-

land

do

rith-

e to

and-

cept

lem-

me;

nder

The planter will fay, that, if he is to allow his negroes more recreation and to indulge them in more hours of absence from their work, he can never reimburse himself for the charge he has been at in the purchase of the slave, nor make the profits which induced

him

him to go to that expence. But this, though it appears plausible enough at first, because the slaves are very dear, and because they do not yield above ten or twelve pounds a head annually clear profit by their labour, is notwithstanding very fallacious. For let it be confidered, that, out of their stock of eighty thousand in Barbadoes, there die every year five thousand negroes more than are born in that island: in effect, this people is under a necessity of being entirely renewed every fixteen years; and what must we think of the management of a people, who, far from increasing greatly, as those who have no loss by wars ought to do, must, in so short a space of time as fixteen years, without foreign recruits, be entirely confumed to a man? Let us suppose that these slaves stand the Barbadians in no more than twenty pounds a head out of the ship; whereas, in reality, they cost a greatdeal more: this makes one hundred thousand pounds every year, and in fixteen years one million fix hundred thousand pounds. A sum really astonishing, and amounting to a fourth of the value of every thing they export.

Now suppose, that, by allowing a more moderate labour and some other indulgences, a great number of these deaths might be prevented (and many I think it is probable would so be prevented), and that they could keep up within a thousand of their stock (and why

they

they could not entirely keep it up by fuch means, I cannot possibly guess) they would fave in this way eighty thousand pounds every year. But from thence we must deduct the time in which these slaves have been unemployed. I suppose that all reasonable indulgences might be given of every fort for the difference of forty thousand pounds, which is the labour of four thousand slaves. This will be far from a fmall allowance, especially as in this way less time will be loft by fickness, and the surgeon will have less employment. Then, after all deductions, by behaving like good men, good masters, and good christians, the inhabitants of this one island would fave forty thousand pounds a year; which if, instead of being faved, it were lost by fuch a proceeding, it ought to be considered as a necessary loss, and borne accordingly.

11

(-

16

1 -

by

of

ts,

p-

ın

the

eat-

and

one

um

rth

ore

ces,

ore-

buld

b up

why

they

This matter, though not, I think, before shewn in this same light, seems in itself extremely clear; but if it were yet clearer, there are several gentlemen of the West-Indies who could not comprehend it; though a waggoner in England will comprehend very clearly, that, if he works his horse but moderately, and feeds him well, he will draw more profit from him in the end, than if he never gave him an hour's respite in the day from his work, and at night turned him upon the common for his subsistence. I am far from con-117 1

tending

tending in favour of an effeminate indulgence to these people. I know that they are stubborn and intractable for the most part, and that they must be ruled with the rod of iron. I would have them ruled, but not crushed with it. I would have a humanity exercised which is confistent with steadiness. And I think it clear from the whole course of history, that those nations which have behaved with the greatest humanity to their slaves, were always best served, and ran the least hazard from their rebellions. And I am the more convinced of the necessity of these indulgences, as flaves certainly cannot go through so much work as freemen. The mind goes a great way in every thing; and when a man knows that his labour is for himself, and that the more he labours, the more he is to acquire, this consciousness carries him through, and supports him beneath fatigues, under which he otherwise would have sunk.

The prejudice this faving would be to the African trade, is, I know, an objection which to some would appear very plausible. But surely, one cannot hear without horror of a trade which must depend for its support upon the annual murder of several thousands of innocent men; and indeed nothing could excuse the slave trade at all, but the necessity we are under of peopling our colonies, and the consideration that the slaves we buy were in the

fame

129

ıl-

acgh, der

the hich But apon f inkcuse

e are conthe fame fame condition in Africa, either hereditary or taken in war. But, in fact, if the waste of these men should become less, the price would fall; then, if a due order were taken, the fame demand might be kept, by extending our colonies, which is now produced by the ha-This is the case on vock made of the people. the continent, where, though the flaves increase, there is an annual call for seven thou-

fand at leaft.

. The principal time I would have referved for the indulgence I propose to be granted to the flaves, is Sunday, or the Lord's day; a day which is profaned in a manner altogether scandalous in our colonies. On this day, I would have them regularly attend at church; I would have them, particularly the children, carefully (full as carefully as any others) instructed in the principles of religion and virtue, and especially in the humility, submission, and honesty, which become their condition. rest of the day might be devoted to innocent recreation; to these days of relaxation, and with the same exercises, should be added some days in the grand festivals of Christmas, Easter, and Whitsuntide, and perhaps, four or five days in the year besides. Such methods would by degrees habituate their mafters, not to think them a fort of beafts, and without fouls, as some of them do at present, who treat them accordingly; and the flaves would of course VOL. II.

130 An Account of the European

grow more honest, tractable, and less of eyeservants; unless the sanctions of religion, the
precepts of morality, and all the habits of an
early institution, be of no advantage to mankind.
Indeed I have before me an * author, if he
may be so called, who treats the notion of
bringing the negroes to christianity with
contempt, and talks of it at the best, as a
thing of indifference. But, besides that he
appears to me a writer of very little judgment, I cannot conceive with what sace
any body, who pretends to inform the public, can set up as an advocate for irreligion,
barbarism, and gross ignorance.

CHAP. XII.

Proposal for a sort of enfranchisement of mulattoes and negroes. Danger from the multitude of house negroes.

T is said, that the law of England is savourable to liberty; and so far this observation is just, that, when we had men in a servile condition amongst us, the law took advantage even of neglects of the masters to enfranchise the villain; and seemed for that purpose even to subtilize a little; because our ancestors judged, that freemen were the real support of the kingdom. What if in our colonies we

* Oldmixon.

should

should go so far, as to find out some medium between liberty and absolute slavery, in which we might place all mulattoes after a certain limited fervitude to the owner of the mother: and fuch blacks, who being born in the islands, their masters for their good services should think proper in some degree to enfranchise? These might have land allotted them, or, where that could not be spared, some fort of fixed employment; from either of which they should be obliged to pay a certain mode-Whatever they rate rent to the public. should acquire above this, to be the reward of their industry. The necessity of paying the rent would keep them from idleness; and when men are once fet to work through necessity, they will not stop there; but they will gradually strive for conveniencies, and some even for superfluities. All this will add to the demand for our goods, and the colony will be strengthened by the addition of so many men, who will have an interest of their own to fight for.

There is, amongst others, a very bad custom in our colonies of multiplying their houshold slaves far beyond reason and necessity. It is not uncommon for families of no very great fortunes, to have twenty-five or thirty in the capacity of menial servants only. These are so many hands taken from planting, to be of no manner of use to the public; but they are

K.2 infinitely

hould

ehe

an nd.

he

of

vith

as a he

idgface

oub−

gion,

ulat-

titude

vour-

ration

ervile

ntage

hchife

e even

estors

ort of

es we

infinitely the most dangerous of the slaves; for being at all times about our people, they come to abate of that great reverence, which the field negroes have for the whites, without losing any thing of the resentment of their condition, which is common to both. And besides, in any insurrection, they have it more in their power to strike a sudden and fatal blow. Surely a sumptuary aw might be contrived to restrain the number of the menial flaves, as there might and ought to be one strictly enjoining all who keep five fervants, to have one white man and one white woman amongst them, without any power of being indulged in a contrary practice; as it ought to be a rule never to be broken through, to have not only the overfeers, but even all the drivers, white men.

The alarms we are under at the news of any petty armament in the West-Indies is a demonstrative proof of the weakness of our condition there; which is, however, so far from rousing us to seek any proper remedy, that there are not wanting of the people of that country, many who would use a thousand pretences to prevent our taking the only possible means of securing their own possible always be found ready to prefer some present gain to their suture and more permanent interests. But the apparent and dangerous

dangerous progress of the French ought, methinks, to rouse us from our long inaction, and to animate us to enterprise some tegulations, in a strain of policy far superior to any thing I have ventured to hint, for the interest of the commerce, and the honour of the councils, of the British nation.



K₃ PART

be nebe ferhite r of as it ugh, n all vs of is a our far hedy, le of isand only pofmen

> fome per-

and erous

ey

ch

out

eir

nd

ore atal 134 An Account of the European



PART VII.

British North America.

e a caracteristrativa de la companya de la company

CHAP. I.

A general view of the English dominions in North America.

T is somewhat difficult to ascertain the bounds of the English property in North America, to the Northern and Western sides; for to the Northward, it should seem, that we might extend our claims quite to the pole itself, nor does any nation seem inclined to dispute the property of this Northernmost country with us. France has, by the treaty of Utrecht, ceded to us Hudson's bay, the streights of Hudson, and all the country bordering upon that bay and those streights. If we should chuse to take our stand upon the Northern extremity of New Britain, or Terra

de Labrador, and look towards the South, we have a territory extending in that aspect from the 60th to the 31st degree of North latitude, and confequently more than feventeen hundred miles long in a direct line. This country is, all the way, washed by the Atlantic ocean on the East; to the South it has the small remains of the Spanish Florida; but to the Westward, our bounds are disputed by our enemies, and do not feem well agreed upon amongst ourselves. They who govern themfelves by the charters to our colonies, run their jurisdiction quite across the continent to the South-Sea; others contract our rights to the hither banks of the Missisppi, and take four of the great lakes into our dominions; but upon what grounds they have fixed upon that river as a barrier, other than that rivers or mountains feem to be a species of natural boundaries, I cannot determine. (upon the fame grounds, I suppose) have contracted us within limits yet narrower; they make the Apalachian mountains, the lake Ontario, and the river St. Laurence, the most Westerly frontier of our rights in America. The French, agreeing in some respects with these latter (or the latter rather agreeing with the French, whose maps they have for a long time fervilely and shamefully copied), have made the mountains hem us in from their Southern commencement to about the 44th K 4 degres

茶茶

in

des; we pole d to nost eaty

> If the

the

de

degree of North latitude, or thereabouts, where this long chain terminates; then they draw a line flanting to the North-East, by which they cut off a great part of the provinces of New York, New England, and Nova Scotia, and leave our bounds at such a distance from the river St. Laurence, as they judge convenient.

This distribution, and the military dispofitions which the French have made to support it, form the principal cause of the quarrel which now subsists between the two kingdoms; and it is the issue of this quarrel, which must instruct future geographers in adjusting the boundaries of the two nations. For the present, I shall only mention what we have fettled, without offering any opinion of my own concerning our bounds. Our rights in Nova Scotia have been already ascertained and established in a clear and cogent manner; but, with regard to our claims in the Ohio and Missisppi, the rashness of some writers in a manner which is a public concern feems to me very blameable. Some of them timidly or ignorantly drawing our territories into a very inconvenient narrowness; whilst others have madly claimed all North America from fea to fea: fome would give us very narrow bounds; whilst others will hear of no bounds at all.

Posterity

re

W

ch

of

ia,

m

n-

0-

ıp-

ar-

ng-

ich

ing

the

ave

my

s in

ned

er;

hio

ters

ems

idly

to a

ners

rom

row inds

rity

Posterity will perhaps think it unaccountable, that, in a matter of such importance, we could have been so thoughtless as to leave on our back fuch a nation as France, without determining, in any manner, even fufficiently clear to fettle our own demands, what part of the country was our own right, or what we determined to leave to the diferction of our neighbours; or that, wholly intent upon fettling the sea coast, we have never cast an eye into the country, to discover the necessity of making a barrier against them, with a proper force; which formerly did not need to have been a very great one, nor to be maintained at any great expence. That cheap and timely caution would have faved us thousands of lives and millions of money; but the hour is now passed.

In the ensuing discourse, I think it better neither to consider our settlements directly in the order of the time of their establishment, nor of their advantage to the mother country, but as they lie near one another, North and South, from New England to Carolina; referving for the end the new fettlements on the Northern and Southern extremities, those of Nova Scotia and Georgia, and the unfettled

countries about Hudson's bay.

CHAP.

137

CHAP. II.

First attempts to settle North America. The rise and progress of the Puritans. They are persecuted by Laud. Several fly into New England.

7 E derive our rights in America from the discovery of Sebastian Cabot, who first made the Northern continent in 1407. The fact is sufficiently certain to establish a right to our fettlements in North America: but the particulars are not known distinctly enough to encourage me to enter into a detail of his voyage. The country was in general called Newfoundland, a name which is now appropriated folely to an island upon its coast. It was a long time before we made any attempt to fettle this country; though in this point we were no more backward than our neighbours, who probably did not abstain so long out of respect to our prior discovery. Sir Walter Raleigh shewed the way, by planting a colony in the Southern part, which he called Virginia. However, the spirit of colonization was not yet fully raised. Men lived at ease in their own country, and the new fettlement of Virginia, though dressed up in all the showy colours which eloquence could bestow upon it, gave, adventurers but little encouencouragement. The affairs of North America were in the hands of an exclusive com-

pany; and they prospered accordingly.

be

in ho

77.

a

ca:

tly

tail

eral

ow aft.

at-

this

our

ı fo

ry.

nt-

he

lo-

ved

ew

in

uld

ttle ou-

Things remained in this condition until the latter end of the reign of James the first. From the commencement of the reformation in England, two parties of protestants subsisted amongst us; the first had chosen gradually and almost imperceptibly to recede from the church of Rome; softening the lines rather than erasing the figure, they made but very little alteration in the appearances of things. And the people, feeing the exterior fo little altered, hardly perceived the great changes they had made in the doctrines of their religion. The other party, of a warmer temper, had more zeal and less policy. Several of them had fled from the persecution in queen Mary's days; and they returned in those of queen Elizabeth with minds fufficiently heated by refentment of their fufferings, and by the perpetual disputations which had exercised them all the while they were abroad. Abroad they learned an aversion to the episcopal order, and to religious ceremonies of every fort; they were impregnated with an high spirit of liberty, and had a strong tendency to the republican form of government. Queen Elizabeth had enough of the blood of Harry the eighth, to make her impatient of an opposition to her will, especially in matters of religion,

gion, in which she had an high opinion of her own knowledge. She advised with the party but very little in the alterations which she thought proper to make; and, disliking the notions which they seemed to entertain in politics, she kept them down during the whole course of her reign with an uniform and in-

flexible feverity.

However, the party was far enough from being destroyed. The merit of their sufferings, the affected plainness of their dress, the gravity of their deportment, the use of scripture phrases upon the most ordinary occasions, and even their names, which had something striking and venerable, as being borrowed from the old testament or having a sort of affected relation to religious matters, gained them a general esteem amongst sober people of ordinary understandings. This party was very numerous; and their zeal made them yet more considerable than their numbers. They were commonly called Puritans.

When king James came to the throne, he had a very fair opportunity of pacifying matters; or at worst he might have left them in the condition he found them; but it happened quite otherwise. The unkingly disputation at Hampton-court did more to encourage the puritans to persevere in their opinions, by the notice which was taken of them, than all king James's logic, as a scholar, backed with

in-

ferthe ripons, ning wed

of ined ople was hem

natn in ened on at the the

all with

all his power as a king, could do to suppress that party. They were persecuted, but not destroyed; they were exasperated, and yet left powerful; and a severity was exercised towards them, which at once exposed the weakness and the ill intentions of the government.

In this state things continued until the accession of Charles, when they were far from mending. This prince, endowed with many great virtues, had very few amiable qualities. As grave as the puritans themselves, he could never engage the licentious part of the world in his favour; and that gravity being turned against the puritans, made him but the more odious to them. He gave himself up entirely to the church and churchmen; and he finished his ill conduct in this respect, by conferring the first ecclesiastical dignity of the kingdom, and a great sway in temporal affairs, upon doctor Laud. Hardly fit to direct a college, he was called to govern a kingdom. He was one of those indiscreet men of good intentions, who are the people in the world that make the worst figure in politics. This man thought he did good fervice to religion by a scrupulous enquiry into the manner in which the minifters every where conformed to the regulations of the former reigns. He deprived great numbers for nonconformity. Not fatisfied with this, in which perhaps he was justifiable enough

enough if he had managed prudently, he made new regulations, and introduced on a people already abhorrent of the most necessary ceremonies ceremonies of a new kind, of a most useless nature, and such as were even ridiculous, if the serious consequences which attended them may not intitle them to be

confidered as matters of importance.

Several great men, disgusted at the proceedings of the court, and entertaining very reafonable apprehensions for the public liberty, to make themselves popular, attached themfelves to the popular notions of religion, and affected to maintain them with great zeal. Others became puritans through principle. And now their affairs put on a respectable appearance; in proportion as they became of consequence, their sufferings seemed to be more and more grievous; the severities of Laud raised not terror as formerly, but a sort of indignant hatred; and they became every day further and further from listening to the least terms of agreement with surplices, organs, common-prayer, or table at the Eastend of the church. As they who are serious about trifles are serious indeed, their lives began to grow miserable to several on account of these ceremonies; and, rather than be obliged to submit to them, there was no part of the world to which they would not have fled with chearfulness.

Early

Early in the reign of king James a number of persons of this persuasion had sought refuge in Holland; in which, though a country of the greatest religious freedom in the world, they did not find themselves better satisfied than they had been in England. There they were tolerated indeed, but watched; their zeal began to have dangerous languors for want of opposition; and, being without power or consequence, they grew tired of the indolent security of their sanctuary; they chose to remove to a place where they should see no fuperior; and therefore they fent an agent to England, who agreed with the council of Plymouth, for a tract of land in America, within their jurisdiction, to settle in, after they had obtained from the king a privilege to do fo. The Plymouth council was a company, who, by their charter, had not only all the coast of North America from Nova Scotia to the Southern parts of Carolina (the whole country being then distinguished by the names of South and North Virginia) as a scene for their exclusive trade; but they had the entire property of the foil besides.

This colony established itself at a place which they called New Plymouth. They were but few in number; they landed in a bad season; and they were not at all supported but from their private funds. The winter was premature, and terribly cold. The country

90

-b

a-

n-

nd

al.

le.

ble

of

be

of

ort

ery

the

Or-

ast-

ous

be-

t of

ged

the

144 An Account of the European

was all covered with wood, and afforded very little for the refreshment of persons fickly with fuch a voyage, or for fustenance of an infant people. Near half of them perished by the scurvy, by want, and the severity of the climate; but they who furvived, not dispirited with their losses nor with the hardships they were still to endure, supported by the vigour which was then the character of Englishmen and by the satisfaction of finding themselves out of the reach of the spiritual arm, reduced this favage country to yield them a tolerable livelihood, and by degrees a comfortable subsistence.

This little establishment was made in the Several of their brethren in England, labouring under the fame difficulties, took the same methods of escaping from them. The colony of puritans infenfibly increased; but as yet they had not extended themselves much beyond New Plymouth. It was in the year 1620, that the colony began to flourish in fuch a manner, that they foon became a considerable people. By the close of the enfuing year they had built four towns, Salem, Dorchester, Charles-town, and Boston, which has fince become the capital of New England. That enthusiasm which was reversing every thing at home, and which is so dangerous in every fettled community, proved of admirable fervice here. It became a principle

of life and vigour, that enabled them to conquer all the difficulties of a favage country. Their exact and sober manners proved a substitute for a proper subordination and regular form of government, which they had for some time wanted, and the want of which in such a country had otherwise been felt very se-

verely.

n,

m

n-

he

in

es,

m.

ed;

ves

the

rish

ne a

en-

em,

hich

ng-

ling

ger-

to f

iple

ot

And now, not only they who found themfelves uneafy at home upon a religious account, but several by reason of the then profitable trade of furs and skins, and for the sake of the fishery, were invited to settle in New England. But this colony received its principal assistance from the discontent of several great men of the puritan party, who were its protectors, and who entertained a defign of fettling amongst them in New England, if they should fail in the measures they were pursuing for establishing the liberty, and reforming the religion of their mother country. They follicited grants in New England, and were at a great expence in fettling them. Amongst these patentees, we see the lords Brook, Say and Seal, the Pelhams, the Hampdens, and the Pyms; the names which afterwards appeared with so much eclat upon a greater stage. It was faid that fir Matthew Boynton, fir William Constable, sir Arthur Haslerig, and Oliver Cromwell were actually upon the point of embarking for New England; when arch-Vol. II. bishop

bishop Laud, unwilling that so many objects of his hatred should be removed out of the reach of his power, applied for, and obtained, an order from the court to put a stop to these transportations; and thus he kept forcibly from venting itself that virulent humour which he lived to see the destruction of himself, his order, his religion, his master, and the constitution of his country. However, he was not able to prevail so far as to hinder New England from receiving vast reinforcements, as well of the clergy who were deprived of their livings or not admitted to them for non-conformity, as of such of the laity who adhered to their opinions.

CHAP. III.

Difference in religion, divides the colony. Maffachuset. Connecticut. Providence. Spirit of persecution. Persecution of the Quakers. Disputes about grace.

HE part of New England called Massachuset's Bay had now settlements very thick all along the sea-shore. Some slips from these were planted in the province of Main and New Hampshire, being torn from the original stock by the religious violence, which was the chief characteristic of the first settlers in New England. The patentees we last mentioned SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 147 mentioned principally fettled upon the river Connecticut, and established a separate and independent government there: some persons

independent government there: some persons having before that fixed themselves upon the borders of this river, who sled from the tyranny arising from the religious differences which were moulded into the first principles of the

Plymouth and Massachuset's colonies.

d

W

S,

of

n-.d-

Taf-

irit

ffa-

very

rom

lain

the

hich

tlers

last

For a confiderable time, the people of New England had hardly any that deserved the name of a regular form of government. court took very little care of them. By their charter they were empowered to establish such an order, and to make fuch laws, as they pleafed, provided they were not contrary to the laws of England. A point not eafily fettled, neither was there any means appointed for fettling it. As they who composed the new colonies were generally persons of a contracted way of thinking and most violent enthusiasts, they imitated the Jewish polity in almost all respects; and adopted the books of Moses as the law of the land. The first laws which they made were grounded upon them, and were therefore very ill fuited to the customs, genius, or circumstances of that country, and of those times; for which reason they have fince fallen into disuse.

As to religion, it was, as I have faid, the Puritan. In England, this could hardly be considered as a formed sect at the time of L 2

148 An Account of the European

their emigration, fince feveral who had received episcopal ordination were reckoned to belong to it. But as foon as they found themfelves at liberty in America, they fell into a way very little different from the independent Every parish was sovereign withmode. in itself. Synods indeed were occasionally called; but they ferved only to prepare and digest matters, which were to receive their fanction from the approbation of the several The fynods could exercise no branch of ecclesiastical jurisdiction, either as to doctrine or to discipline. They had no power of excommunication. They could only refuse to hold communion with those whose principles and practices they disliked. magistrates assisted in those synods, not only to hear, but to deliberate and determine. From such a form as this, great religious freedom might, one would have imagined, be well expected. But the truth is, they had no idea at all of fuch a freedom. The very doctrine of any fort of toleration was so odious to the greater part, that one of the first perfecutions fet up here was against a small party which arose amongst themselves, who were hardy enough to maintain, that the civil magistrate had no lawful power to use compulsory measures in affairs of religion. After harraffing these people by all the vexatious ways imaginable, they obliged them to fly out of their jurisdiction. These emigrants settled themselves to the Southward, near Cape Cod, where they formed a new government upon their own principles, and built a town, which they called Providence. This has since made the fourth and smallest, but not the worst inhabited, of the New England governments, called Rhode Island, from an island of that name which forms a part of it. As a persecution gave rise to the first settlement of New England, so a subsequent persecution in this colony gave rise to new colonies, and this facilitated the spreading of the people over the country.

ir

al

no

as

no ily

ofe

he

nly

ne. ee-

vell

no

ery

fo

first

nall

vho

ivil

m-

fter

ous out

of

If men, merely for the moderation of their fentiments, were exposed to such severe treatment, it was not to be expected that others should escape unpunished. The very first colony had hardly set its foot in America, when, discovering that some amongst them were false brethren and ventured to make use of the common prayer, they sound means of making the country so uneasy to them, that they were glad to sly back to England.

As foon as they began to think of making laws, I find no less than five about matters of religion; all contrived, and not only contrived but executed in some respects, with so much rigour, that the persecution which drove the Puritans out of England might be considered as great lenity and indulgence in

3

150 An ACCOUNT of the European

the comparison. For, in the first of these laws, they deprive every one who does not communicate with their established church, of the right to his freedom, or a vote in the election of any of their magistates. In the fecond, they fentence to banishment any who should oppose the fourth commandment, or deny the validity of infant baptism or the authority of magistrates. In the third, they condemn Quakers to banishment, and make it capital for them to return; and, not stopping at the offenders, they lay heavy fines upon all who should bring them into the province, or even harbour them for an hour. In the fourth, they provide banishment, and death in case of return, for Jesuits and Popish priests of every denomination. In the fifth, they decree death to any who shall worship images. After they had provided such a complete code of persecution, they were not long without opportunities of reading bloody lectures upon it. The Quakers, warmed with that spirit which animates the beginning of most sects, had spread their doctrines all over the British dominions in Europe, and began at last to spread them with equal zeal in America. The clergy and the magistrates in New England took the alarm; they seized upon some of thate people, they fet them in the stocks and in the pillory without effect; they scourged, they imprisoned, they banished them; they treated

treated all those, who seemed to commiserate their fufferings, with great rigour; but their persecution had no other effect than to inflame their own cruelty and the zeal of the fufferers. The constancy of the Quakers under their fufferings begot a pity and esteem for their persons, and an approbation of their doctrines; their proselytes increased; the Quakers returned as fast as they were banished; and the fury of the ruling party was raifed to fuch a height, that they proceeded to the most fanguinary extremities. Upon the law they had made, they feized at different times upon five of those who had returned from banishment, condemned, and hanged them. It is unknown how far their madness had extended, if an order from the king and council in England about the year 1601 had not interposed to restrain them.

0

e

ıg

nc

e,

he

in

efts

łe-

es.

ode.

pp-

it.

had

do-

ead

Fhe

and

e at

and

ged, they ated It is a task not very agreeable to infist upon such matters; but, in reality, things of this nature form the greatest part of the history of New England, for a long time. They perfecuted the Anabaptists, who were no inconsiderable body amongst them, with almost an equal severity. In thort, this people, who in England could not bear being chastisted with rods, had no sooner got free from their setters than they scourged their sellow resuges with scorpions; though the absurdity, as well as

L 4

the

152 An Account of the European

the injustice, of such a proceeding in them,

might stare them in the face!

One may observe, that men of all persuasions confine the word persecution, and all the ill ideas of injustice and violence which belong to it, folely to those severities which are exercifed upon themselves, or upon the party they are inclined to favour. Whatever is inflicted upon others, is a just punishment upon obstinate impiety, and not a restraint upon conscientious differences. The persecution we have ourselves suffered, is a good ground for retaliation against an old enemy; and if one of our friends and fellow sufferers should prove so wicked as to quit our cause, and weaken it by his diffension, he deserves to be punished yet more than the old enemy himself. Besides this, the zealous never fail to draw political inferences from religious tenets, by which they interest the magistrate in the dispute; and then to the heat of a religious fervour is added the fury of a party zeal. All intercourse is cut off between the parties. They lose all knowledge of each other, though countrymen and neighbours; and are therefore easily imposed upon with the most abfurd stories concerning each other's opinions and practises. They judge of the hatred of the adverse side by their own. Then fear is added to their hatred; and preventive injuries arife.

the most violent courses.

ns

ill

ng

r-

ey

ed

ti-

n-

we

for

ne

uld

ind

be

m-

l to

ets.

the

ous

All

ies.

ugh

ere-

ab-

ons

d of

ar is

ries

rife

Such is the manner of proceeding of religious parties towards each other; and in this respect the New England people are nor warfe than the rest of mankind, nor was their severity any just matter of reflexion woon that mode of religion which they profess. No religion whattoever, true or false, an excuse its own members, or accuse those of any other, upon the score of persecution. The principles which give rife to it are common to all mankind, and they influence them as they are men, and not as they belong to this or that persuasion. In all persuasions the bigots are persecutors; the men of a cool and reasonable piety are favourers of toleration; because the former fort of men, not taking the pains to be acquainted with the grounds of their adverfaries tenets, conceive them to be so absurd and monstrous, that no man of sense can give into them in good earnest. For which reason they are convinced that some oblique bad motive induces them to pretend to the belief of fuch doctrines, and to the maintaining of them with obstinacy. This is a very general principle in all religious differences, and it is the corner stone of all persecution. CHAL.

Befides

Besides the disputes with those of another denomination, the Independents were for a long time harraffed with one in the bowels of their own churches. The stale dispute about grace and works produced diffensions, riots, and almost a civil war in the colony. The famous Sir Henry Vane the younger, an enthusiastic, giddy, turbulent man, of a no very good disposition, came hither with some of the adventurers; and, rather than remain idle, play'd at finall games in New England, where the people had chosen him governor." It is not hard to conceive, how fuch a man, at the head of fuch a people and engaged in fuch controversy, could throw every thing into confusion. In the very height of this hopeful dispute, they had a war upon their hands with fome of the Indian nations. Their country was terribly harraffed, and numbers were every day murdered, by the incursions of the enemy. All this time they had an army in readiness for action, which they would not fuffer to march even to defend their own lives and possessions, because "many of the " officers and foldiers were under a covenant est habit is and to an insulting prof

form with choinary. The markey pound promple in thireligions and corees, multi-

15 111 13

the corner flore of all porter mione. CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

of

ut

ts,

he) n-

ry

of

le,

ere

is

he

tch'

)n-'

ful

ith

try

rere

the

not

wn

the

ant

1 11

AP.

The Witchcraft delusion. Great cruelties. The madness ends in the accusation of the magistrates. Research

gan to breathe a little from these dissensions, and had their hands tied up from persecuting the Quakers and Anabaptists, they fell not long after into another madness of a yet more extraordinary and dangerous kind, which, like some epidemical disease, ran through the whole country, and which is perhaps one of the most extraordinary delusions recorded in history. This tragedy began in the year 1692.

There is a town in New England, which they fanatically called Salem. One Paris was the minister there. He had two daughters troubled with convulsions; which being attended with some of those extraordinary appearances not unfrequent in such disorders, he imagined they were bewitched. As soon as he concluded upon witcheraft as the cause of the distemper, the next enquiry was, how to find out the person who had bewitched them. He cast his eyes upon an Indian servant woman of his own, whom he frequently beat, and used her with such severity, that she at last confessed

156 An Account of the European

confessed herself the witch, and was committed to goal, where she lay for a long time.

The imaginations of the people were not yet sufficiently heated to make a very sormal business of this; therefore they were content to discharge her from prison after a long confinement, and to sell her as a slave for her fees.

However, as this example set the discourse about witchcraft affoat, some people, troubled with a fimilar complaint, began to fancy themselves bewitched too. Persons in an ill state of health are naturally fond of finding out causes for their distempers; especially such as are extraordinary, and call the eyes of the public upon them. There was perhaps something of malice in the affair besides. For one of the first objects whom they fixed upon was Mr. Burroughs, a gentleman who had formerly been minister of Salem: but, upon some of the religious disputes which divided the country, he differed with his flock and left them. This man was tried with two others for witchcraft, by a special commission of over and terminer, directed to some of the gentlemen of the best fortunes, and reputed to be of the best understandings in the country. fore these judges, a piece of evidence was delivered, the most weak and childish, the most repugnant to itself, and to common sense, that perhaps ever was known upon any ferious occalion.

casion. Yet by those judges, upon that evidence, and the verdict founded upon it, this minister, a man of a most unexceptionable character, and two others, men irreproachable in their lives, were fentenced to die, and accordingly hanged. Then these victims of the popular madness were stript naked, and their bodies thrown into a pit, half covered with earth, and left to the discretion of birds and wild beafts. Upon the same evidence, in a little time after, sixteen more suffered death; the greatest part of them dying in the most exemplary fentiments of piety, and with the strongest professions of their innocence. One man, refusing to plead, suffered in the cruel manner the law directs on that occasion, by a flow pressure to death.

ot

al

nt

ng

rfe

ed

cy ill

ng

ch

the

ie-

one

Nas

er-

of

un-

m.

for

yer

tle-

e of

Be-

de-

host

that

OC=

ian,

The imaginations of the people, powerfully affected by these shocking examples, turned upon nothing but the most gloomy and horrid ideas. The most ordinary and innocent actions were metamorphosed into magical ceremonies, and the sury of the people augmented in proportion as this gloom of imagination increased. The slame spread with rage and rapidity into every part of the country. Neither the tenderness of youth, nor the infirmity of age, nor the honour of the sex, nor the sacredness of the ministry, nor the respectable condition of fortune or character, was the least protection. Children of eleven

years

158 An Account of the European

years old were taken up for forceries. The women were stripped in the most shameful manner to search them for magical teats. The scorbutic stains common on the skins of old persons, were called the devil's pinches. This was indisputable evidence against them. As such they admitted every idle flying report, and even stories of ghosts, which they honoured with a name, not found in our law books. They called them Spectral Evidence.

What these extraordinary testimonies wanted was compleated by the torture, by which a number of these unhappy victims were driven to confess whatever their tormentors thought proper to dictate to them. Some women owned they had been lain with by the devil, and other things equally ridiculous

and abominable.

It is not difficult to imagine the deplorable state of this province, when all mens lives depended upon the caprice and folly of diseased and distracted minds; when revenge and malice had a full opportunity of wreaking themselves in a most dreadful and bloody manner, by an instrument that was always in readiness, and to which the public phrenzy gave a certain and dangerous effect. What was a yet worse circumstance, the wretches who suffered the torture, being not more present to own themselves guilty than to discover their associates and accomplices, unable to give

ieits. of es. m. rehey aw nce. intiich vere tors ome ı by lous

he

afed and king body ways enzy Vhat

able

de-

over e to give

bref+

give any real account, named people at random, who were immediately taken up, and treated in the same cruel manner upon this extorted evidence. An universal terror and consternation seized upon all. Some prevented accusation, and charged themselves with witchcraft, and so escaped death. Others fled the province; and many more were preparing to fly. The prisons were crouded; people were executed daily; yet the rage of the accusers was as fresh as ever, and the number of the witches and the bewitched increased every hour. A magistrate, who had committed forty persons for this crime, fatigued with fo disagreeable an employment and ashamed of the share he had in it, refused to grant any more warrants. He was himself immediately accused of forcery; and thought himself happy in leaving his family and fortune, and escaping with life out of the province. A jury, struck with the affecting manner and the folemn affurances of innocence of a woman brought before them, ventured to acquit her, but the judges fent them out again; and in an imperious manner forced th :: to find the woman guilty; and she was hanged immediately.

The magistrates and ministers, whose prudence ought to have been employed in healing this distemper and assuaging its fury, threw in new combustible matter. They

encouraged the accusers; they affisted at the examinations, and they extorted the confeffions, of witches. None fignalized their zeal more upon this occasion than Sir William Phips, the governor, a New England man, of the lowest birth, and yet meaner education; who, having raifed a fudden fortune by a lucky accident, was knighted, and afterwards made governor of the province. Doctor Encrease Mather, and Doctor Cotton Mather, the pillars of the New England church, were equally fanguine. Several of the most popular ministers, after twenty executions had been made, addressed Sir William Phips with thanks for what he had done, and with exhortations to proceed in fo laudable a work.

The accusers encouraged in this manner did not know where to stop, nor how to proceed. They were at a loss for objects. They began at last to accuse the judges themselves. What was worse, the nearest relations of Mr. Encrease Mather were involved, and witchcraft began even to approach the governor's own It was now high time to give things another turn. The accusers were discouraged by authority. One hundred and fifty, who lay in prison, were discharged. hundred more were under accusation; they were passed over; and those who had received fentence of death were reprieved, and in due time pardoned. A few cool moments shewed

the felzeal ianı , of ion; ıcky nade rease the were opubeen with a exer did oceed. began What . Enhcraft own

fifty,
Two
they
eceivand in
ments

newed

hings

iscou-

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 161 shewed them the gross and stupid error that had carried them away, and which was utterly invisible to them all the while they were engaged in this strange prosecution. They grew heartily ashamed of what they had done. But what was infinitely mortifying, the Quakers took occasion to attribute all this mischief to a judgment on them for their persecution. A general fast was appointed; praying God to pardon all the errors of his servants and people in a late tragedy, raised amongst

This was the last paroxysm of the puritanic enthusiasm in New England. This violent sit carried off so much of that humour, that the people there are now grown somewhat like the rest of mankind in their manners, and have much abated of their persecuting spirit.

them by Satan and his instruments.

It is not an incurious speculation to consider these remarkable sallies of the human mind, out of its ordinary course. Whole nations are often carried away by what would never influence one man of sense. The cause is originally weak, and to be suppressed without great dissiculty; but then its weakness prevents any suspicion of the mischief, until it is too late to think of suppressing it at all. In such cases the more weak, improbable, and inconsistent any story is, the more powerful and general is its effect, being helped on by design in some, by folly in others, and kept up Vol. II.

by contagion in all. The more extraordinary the design, the more dreadful the crime, the less we examine into the proofs. The charge and the evidence of some things is the same. However, in some time the minds of people cool, and they are assonished how they ever carne to be so affected.

CHAP. V.

The situation, climate, &c. of New England. Indian corn described. Cattle of New England.

HE events in the nistory of Inow England, their disputes with their governors, the variations in their charters, and their wars with the Indians, afford very little useful or agreeable matter. In their wars there was very little conduct shewn; and though they prevailed in the end; in a manner to the extirpation of that race of people, yet the Indians had always great advantages in the beginning; and the measures of the English to oppose them, were generally injudiciously taken. Their manner too of treating them in the beginning was fo indifcreet (for it was in general no worse) as to provoke them as much to those wars, as the French influence has done fince that time.

The

The country which we call New England is in length fomething less than three hundred miles; at the broadest part it is about two hundred, if we carry it on to those tracts which are possessed by the French; but if we regard the part we have fettled, in general, it does not extend any where much above fixty

miles from the sea coast.

This country lies between the 41st and 45th degrees of North latitude. Though it is fituated almost ten degrees nearer the fun than we are in England, yet the winter begins earlier, lasts longer, and is incomparably more fevere than it is with us. The fummer again is extremely hot, and more fervently to than in places which lie under the same parallels in Europe. However, both the heat and the cold are now far more moderate, and the constitution of the air in all respects far better, than our people found it at their first settlement. The clearing av .y of the woods, and the opening of the ground every where, has, by giving a free passage to the air, carried off those noxious vapours which were so prejudicial to the health of the first inhabi-The temper of the fky is generally both in summer and in winter very steady and ferene. Two months frequently pass without the appearance of a cloud. Their rains are heavy and foon over.

M 2

The

The

ne

ge

ıe.

ole

ver

ind.

ng-

ing-

ver-

their

uie-

there

bugh

o the

the

1 the

glish

loufly

them

t was

em as

uence

The foil of New England is various, but best as you approach the Southward. It affords excellent meadows in the low grounds, and very good pasture almost every where. They commonly allot at the rate of two acres to the maintenance of a cow. The meadows which they reckon the best, yield about a ton of hay by the acre. Some produce two tons, but the hay is rank and four. country is not very favourable to any of the European kinds of grain. The wheat is subject to be blasted; the barley is an hungry grain, and the oats are lean and chaffy. the Indian corn, which makes the general food of the lowest fort of people, flourishes here. This, as it is a species of grain not so univerfally known in England, and as it is that of all others which yields the greatest increase, I shall give a short description of.

This plant, which the native Americans call the Weachin, is known in some of the Southern parts of America by the name of Maize. The ear is about a span in length, consisting of eight rows of the corn, or more, according to the goodness of the ground, with about thirty grains in each row. On the top of the grain hangs a fort of flower, not unlike a tassel of silk, of various colours, white, blue, greenish, black, speckled, striped, which gives this corn, as it grows, a very beautiful appearance. The grain is of all the co-

lours

: a wo his the

ubgry But

eral Thes

t is in-

cans
the
of
gth,
or

the row.

ours, iped, beaue co-

lours

lours which prevail in the flower, but most frequently yellow and white. The stalks grow six or eight feet high, and are of a considerable thickness. They are less high in New England, and other Northern countries, than in Virginia and those which lie more to the Southward. They are jointed like a cane, and at each of these joints shoot out a number of leaves like slags, that make very good fodder for the cattle. The stalk is full of a juice, of which a syrup as sweet as sugar has been frequently made.

This grain is generally fowed in little fquares, and requires a very attentive cultivation. The ground in which it flourishes most is light and fandy; with a small intermixture of loam. About a peck of seed is sufficient for an acre, which at a medium produces about twenty-five bushels. The New England people not only make bread of this grain, but they malt and brew it into a beer, which is not contemptible. However, the greater part of their beer is made of molasses, hopped; with the addition sometimes of the tops of the spruce fir insused.

They raise in New England, besides this and other species of grain, a large quantity of flax, and have made essays upon hemp, that have been far from unsuccessful. An acre of

their cow-pen land produces about a ton of this commodity; but the land is pretty foon M 2 exhauft-

166 An Account of the European

exhausted. This plant probably requires a climate more uniformly warm than New England; for though the greater part of our hemp is brought to us from Northern ports, yet it is in the more Southerly provinces of Russia, that the best which comes to our

market is produced.

Their horned cattle are very numerous in New England, and some of them very large. Oxen have been killed there of eighteen hundred weight. Hogs likewise are numerous, and particularly excellent; and some so large as to weigh twenty-five fcore. They have besides, a breed of small horses, which are extremely hardy. They pace naturally, though in no very graceful or easy manner; but with fuch swiftness, and for so long a continuance, as must appear almost incredible to those who have not experienced it. They have a great number of sheep too, and of a good kind. The wool is of a staple sufficiently long, but it is not near so fine as that of England. However, they manufacture a great deal of it very fuccetsfully. I have feen cloths made there, which were of as close and firm a contexture, though not fo fine, as our best drabs; they were thick, and, as far as I could judge, superior for the ordinary wear of country people, to any thing we make in England.

CHAP. VI.

People of New England. Their numbers. Hiftory of the charters of the colonies here, and the forfeiture of some.

THERE are in this country many gentlemen of considerable landed estates, which they let to farmers, or manage by their stewards or overseers; but the greater part of the people is composed of a substantial yeomanry, who cultivate their own freeholds, without a dependence upon any but Providence and their own industry. These freeholds generally pass to their children in the way of gavelkind; which keeps them from being almost ever able to emerge out of their original happy mediocrity. This manner of inheriting has here an additional good effect. It makes the people the more ready to go backward into the uncultivated parts of the country, where land is to be had at an easy rate and in larger portions. The people, by their being generally freeholders, and by their form of government, have a very free, bold, and republican spirit. In no part of the world are the ordinary fort so independent, or possess so many of the conveniencies of life; they are used from their infancy to the exercise of arms; and they have a militia, which for a militia is by no

AP.

11

of

ur

in

ze.

n-

us,

rge

ave

ex-

igh

ith

nce,

who

reat

ind.

ut it

ow-

very

iere,

mre,

they

upe-

ople,

no means contemptible; and certainly if these men were somewhat more regularly trained, and in better subordination, it would be impossible to find in any country, or in any time ancient or modern, an army better constituted than that which New England can furnish. This too is much the best peopled of any of our colonies upon the continent. It is judged that the four provinces which it comprises, contain about three hundred and fifty thousand souls, including a very small number of Blacks and Indians; the rest are Whites. Douglass, who seems to be well informed in this point, proportions them as follow,

Massachusets bay,	200,000
Connecticut,	100,000
Rhode Island,	30,000
New Hampshire,	24,000
	354,000

These four governments are confederated for their common defence. We have shewn how these several governments have arisen. The most considerable of them for riches and number of people, though not for extent of territory, is Massachusets bay. This province like the others had originally a power of chusing every one of their own magistrates; the governor, the council, the assembly,—all;

and are to have the effect of laws; which they

are to have likewise until the time that the

king's refolution is known. But one point

and of making fuch laws as they thought proper, without fending them home for the apd, probation of the crown. But being accused nof having abused this freedom, in the latter ne end of the reign of Charles the second, they ed ſh. were deprived of it by a judgment in a quo warranto in the king's bench in England. of red They remained from that time to the revolution without any charter. Some time after es, the revolution they received a new one, which, uthough very favourable, was much inferior to the extensive privileges of the former charter, es. which indeed were too extensive for a coloin ny, and what left little more than a nominal dependence on the mother country, and the crown itself. But now, as the governor, lieutenant governor, and the chief places of the law and in the revenue, are in the disposal of the crown; so is the militia; and though the council is chosen by the representatives of the people, yet the governor has a negative which gives him an influence, fufficient to preserve ited the prerogative entire. Appeals for fums above three hundred pounds are admitted to wn the king and council, and all laws passed here ſen. must be remitted to England; where, if they ches do not receive a negative from the crown in tent three years, they are to be confidered as valid, pro-

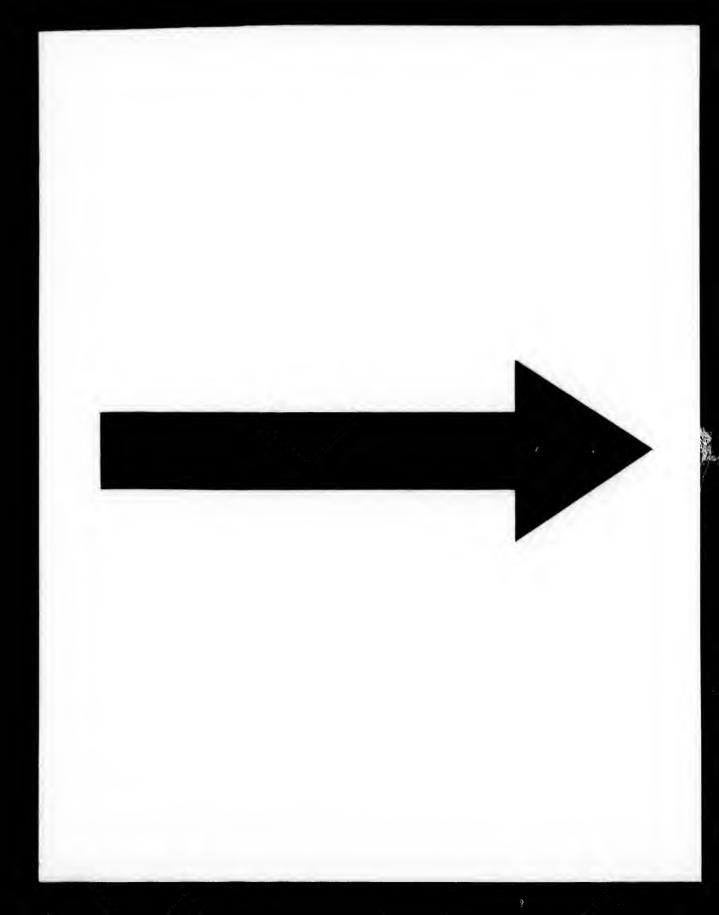
er of

tes;

-all;

and

has



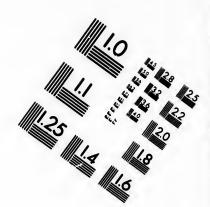
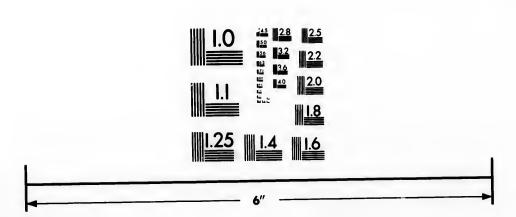


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

STATE OF THE PARTY OF THE PARTY



170 An Account of the European

has been long and resolutely disputed in this colony; the grant of a certain salary to their governor. Many attempts have been made to induce them to this measure; but to no effect. They think a dependence on the people for his salary the most effectual method of restraining the governor from any unpopular acts. To the Massachusets government is united the ancient colony of Plymouth, and

the territory which is called Main.

The colony of Connecticut, which lies upon a river of the fame name to the South of this province, has preserved its ancient privileges, which are now as considerable as those of Massachusets were formerly. At the time that the charter of the former was attacked, that of this government was threatened with the same sate. But they agreed to submit to the king's pleasure; therefore, no judgment was given against them; and being found in this condition at the revolution, it was judged that they were in full possession of their old charter, and have so continued ever since.

The third and smallest of the provinces which compose New England, is Rhod Island. This consists of a small island of that name, and the old plantation of Providence. These united plantations had a charter the same with that of Connecticut, and they have preserved it by the same method. In this province

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 171 province is an unlimited freedom of religion, agreeable to the first principles of its foundation; and though very small, it is from thence

extremely well peopled.

ľ

is

d

h

it is

e :-

0

g it

n

ŀd

es

H

at

e.

he

ve

is

ce

New Hampshire, the fourth province, is much the largest of them all; but not inhabited in proportion. This is more Northerly for the greater part than any of the rest. It is a royal government; that is, the crown has the nomination of all the officers of justice and of the militia, and the appointment of the council.

CHAP. VII.

Boston, its harbour. Trade. Ship-building. Distillery. Foreign trassic. Restexions on the scheme of limiting it. Declension of the trade of New England.

THERE is not one of our fettlements which can be compared, in the abundance of people, the number of confiderable and trading towns, and the manufactures that are carried on in them, to New England. The most populous and flourishing parts of the mother country hardly make a better appearance. Our provinces to the Southward on this continent are recommendable for the generous warmth of the climate, and a luxuriance of soil which naturally throws up a vast variety

variety of beautiful and rich vegetable productions; but New England is the first in America, for cultivation, for the number of people, and for the order which results from both.

Though there are in all the provinces of New England large towns which drive a confiderable trade, the only one which can deferve to be much infifted upon in a defign like ours, is Boston; the capital of Massachufets bay, the first city of New England, and This city is fituated of all North America. on a peninfula, at the bottom of a fine capacious and fafe harbour, which is defended from the outrages of the sea, by a number of islands, and rocks which appear above water. It is entered but by one safe passage; and that is narrow, and covered by the cannon of a regular and very strong fortress. The harbour is more than sufficient for the great number of vessels, which carry on the extensive trade of Boston. At the bottom of the bay is a noble pier, near two thousand feet in length, along which on the North side extends a row of warehouses. The head of this pier joins the principal street of the town, which is, like most of the others, spacious and well built. The town lies at the bottom of the harbour. and forms a very agreeable view. It has a town house, where the courts meet, and the exchange is kept, large, and of a very tolerable taste of architecture. Round the exchange, SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 173

are a great number of well furnished booksellers shops, which find employment for five printing presses. There are ten churches within this town; and it contains at least

twenty thousand inhabitants.

That we may be enabled to form some judgment of the wealth of this city, we must observe that from Christmas 1747, to Christmas 1748, five hundred vessels cleared out from this port only, for a foreign trade; and four hundred and thirty were entered inwards; to say nothing of coasting and fishing vessels, both of which are extremely numerous, and faid to be equal in number to the others. Indeed the trade of New England is great, as it fupplies a large quantity of goods from within itself; but it is yet greater, as the people of this country are in a manner the carriers for all the colonies of North America and the West-Indies, and even for some parts of Europe. They may be considered in this respect as the Dutch of America.

The commodities which the country yields are principally masts and yards, for which they contract largely with the royal navy; pitch, tar, and turpentine; staves, lumber, boards; all forts of provisions, beef, pork, butter and cheese, in large quantities; horses and live cattle; Indian corn and pease; cyder, apples, hemp and slax. Their peltry trade is not very considerable. They have a very noble

le

g

ne

ke

t.

r,

a

ne

e, re

174 An Account of the European

cod fishery upon their coast, which employs a vast number of their people; they are enabled by this to export annually above thirtytwo thousand quintals of choice cod fish, to Spain, Italy, and the Mediterranean, and about nineteen thousand quintals of the refuse fort to the West-Indies, as food for the negroes. The quantity of spirits, which they distil in Boston from the molasses they bring in from all parts of the West-Indies, is as surprising as the cheap rate at which they vend it, which is under two shillings a gallon. With this they supply almost all the consumption of our colonies in North America, the Indian trade there, the vast demands of their own and the Newfoundland fishery, and in great measure those of the African trade; but they are more famous for the quantity and cheapness, than for the excellency of their rum.

They are almost the only one of our colonies which have much of the woollen and linen manufactures. Of the former they have nearly as much as suffices for their own cloathing. It is a close and strong, but a coarse stubborn fort of cloth. A number of Presbyterians from the North of Ireland, driven thence, as it is said, by the severity of their landlords, from an affinity in religious sentiments chose New England as their place of refuge. Those people brought with them

their skill in the linen manufactures, and meeting with very large encouragement, they exercifed it to the great advantage of this colony. At present they make large quantities, and of a very good kind; their principal settlement is in a town, which in compliment to them is called Londonderry. Hats are made in New England, which, in a clandestine way, find a good vent in all the other colonies. The fetting up of these manufactures has been in a great measure a matter necessary to them; for as they have not been properly encouraged in some staple commodity, by which they might communicate with their mother country, while they were cut off from all other resources, they must either have abandoned the country, or have found means of employing their own skill and industry to draw out of it the necessaries of life. The same necessity, together with their convenience for building and manning ships, has made them the carriers for the other colonies.

n

n

'n

at

ut

ir

)-

 $^{\mathrm{hd}}$

eу

n

 \mathbf{of}

v, ir

i-

 \mathbf{of}

m

ir

The business of ship-building is one of the most considerable which Boston or the other sea-port towns in New England carry on. Ships are sometimes built here upon commission; but frequently, the merchants of New England have them constructed upon their own account; and loading them with the produce of the colony, naval stores, fish, and fish-oil principally, they send them out upon a trad-

175

ing voyage to Spain, Portugal, or the Mediterranean; where, having disposed of their cargo, they make what advantage they can by freight, until fuch time as they can fell the veffel herself to advantage, which they seldom fail to do in a reasonable time. They receive the value of the vessel, as well as of the freight of the goods, which from time to time they carried, and of the cargo with which they failed originally, in bills of exchange upon London; for as the people of New England have no commodity to return for the value of above a hundred thousand pounds, which they take in various forts of goods from England, but some naval stores, and those in no great quantities, they are obliged to keep the balance fomewhat even by this circuitous commerce, which, though not carried on with Great Britain nor with British vessels, yet centers in its profits, where all the money which the colonies can make in any manner must center at last.

I know that complaints have been made of this trade, principally because the people of New England, not satisfied with carrying out their own produce, become carriers for the other colonies, particularly for Virginia and Maryland, from whom they take tobacco, which, in contempt of the act of navigation, they carry directly to the foreign market. Where, not having the duty and accumulated charges to which the British merchant is liable

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. to pay, they in a manner wholly out him of Again, our sugar colonies complain as loudly, that the vast trade which New England drives in lumber, live stock, and provisions, with the French and Dutch fugar islands, particularly with the former, enables these islands, together with the internal advantages they possess, greatly to underfell the English plantations. That, the returns which the people of New England make from these islands being in sugar, or, the productions of fugar, fyrups and molasses, the rum which is thence distilled prevents the fale of our West-India rum. That this trade proves doubly disadvantageous to our sugar islands; first, as it enables the French to sell their fugars cheaper than they could otherwise afford to do; and then as it finds them a market for their molasses, and other refuse of fugars, for which otherwise they could find no market at all; because rum interferes with brandy, a confiderable manufacture of Old France.

3

re

ce

ut

n-

ce

ce,

ain

ro-

ade

e of

out

the

and

cco,

ion,

ket.

ated

able

to

These considerations were the ground of a complaint made by the islands to the legislature in England some years ago. They desired that the exportation of lumber, &c. to the French colonies, and the importation of sugars and molasses from thence, might be entirely prohibited. This was undoubtedly a very nice point to settle. On one hand, the Vol. II.

growth of the French West-Indies was manifest and alarming, and it was not to be thought that the French would ever wink at this trade, if it had not been of the greatest advantage to them. On the other hand, the Northern colonies declared, that, if they were deprived of so great a branch of their trade, it must necessitate them to the establishment of manufactures. For if they were cut off from their foreign trade, they never could purchase in England the many things for the use or the ornament of life, which they have from thence. Besides this, the French, deprived of the provision and lumber of New England, must of necessity take every measure to be supplied from their own colonies, which would answer their purposes better, if they could accomplish it, at the same time that it would deprive the New England people of a large and profitable branch of their trade.

These points, and many more, were fully discussed upon both sides. The legislature took a middle course. They did not entirely prohibit the carrying of lumber to the French islands; but they laid a considerable duty upon whatever rum, sugars, or molasses, they should import from thence; to enhance by this means the price of lumber and other necessaries to the French; and, by laying them under difficulties, to set the English sugar plantations, in

fome

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 179 fome measure, upon an equal footing with theirs.

This was undoubtedly a very prudent regulation. For though it was urged, that the Missisppi navigation was so bad, that there was no prospect that the French could ever be supplied with lumber and provisions from thence; and that there were no fnows in Louisiana, the melting of which might facilitate the transportation of lumber into that river, yet it was by no means fafe to trust to that, so as utterly to destroy a trade of our own, which employed so much shipping and fo many failors: because we have a thousand instances, wherein the driving people to the last streights, and putting them under the tuition of such a master as absolute necessity, has taught them inventions, and excited them to an industry, which have compassed things as much regretted at last, as they were unfore-Seen at first.

Though no great snows fall in the Southern parts of Louisiana, yet to the Northward a great deal falls, and not only the Missisppi, but the number of other great rivers which it receives, overflow annually, and they can be in no want of timber convenient enough to navigation. And though the passage to the French islands be for such a great way to the windward, as to bring them these commodities in a more tedious manner, and at a dearer

N 2

rate

 $\mathbf{bl}_{\mathbf{t}}$ the ave deew lure iich hev at it of a fully took proench upon ould

es to

diffi-

ns, in

fome

at At

10

re

le,

nt

off

rate, is it not much better that they should have them cheap from us than dear from themselves? Nor perhaps would even this difficulty, which is indeed much less than it is represented, bring down the French to the par of our fugar colonies, loaded as they are with taxes, groaning under the pressure of many grievances, and deformed by an infinite multitude of abuses and enormities: nor can they with reason or justice hope for a cure of the evils which they fuffer, partly from errors of their own, and partly from mistakes in England, at the expence of the trade of their fister colonies on the continent of America, who are entirely guiltless of their sufferings; nor is it by restraints on the trade of their enemies, but by an effectual and judicious encouragement of their own, that they can hope to remedy these evils, and rival the French establishments.

The French, in permitting us to supply them, it is true, give us a proof that they have advantages from this trade; but this is no proof at all that we derive none from it; for, on that supposition, no trade could be mutually beneficial. Nor it it at all certain, as it has been suggested, that, if we left their refuse of sugars upon their hands, they could turn them to no profit. If the council of commerce could be made to see distinctly that this trade could not prejudice the sale of their brandy,

brandy, and would only make the trade of rum change hands, as the case probably would be; and if they could shew, as they might, what a loss it might be to them entirely to throw away a confiderable part of the produce of their lands, and which was formerly fo valuable to them, there is no doubt but the court would give sufficient encouragement to their own plantations to distil rum, and to vend it in such a manner as might the least prejudice the brandies of France; and then, instead of sending us molasses, as they could distil the spirit far cheaper than our islands, they would fend us the spirit itself; and we may know by experience, especially in that part of the world, how infufficient all regulations are to prevent a contraband, which would be so gainful to particulars.

C

1

r-

es

of

e-

er-

of

di-

ney

the

ply

hey

s is

it;

nu-

re-

buld

l of

that

heir

hdy,

After all, are we certain, that the French would trust for the supply of their islands to Louisiana, or to the precarious supplies from Canada? would they not redouble their application, now made necessary, to Cape Breton? what experiments would they not make in Cayenne for the timber trade? they would certainly try every method, and probably would succeed in some of their trials. Restraints upon trade are nice things; and ought to be well considered. Great care ought to be taken in all such how we sacrifise the interests of one part of our territories to those of

 N_3

anothe

another; and it would be a mistake of the most fatal consequence, if we came to think that the shipping, seamen, commodities, or wealth, of the British colonies, were not effectually the shipping, seamen, and wealth, of Great Britain herself. Sentiments of another kind have frequently done us mischief.

The general plan of our management with regard to the trade of our colonies, methinks, ought to be, to encourage in every one of them some separate and distinct articles, such as, not interfering, might enable them to trade with each other, and all to trade to advantage with their mother country. And then, where we have rivals in any branch of the trade carried on by our colonies, to enable them to fend their goods to the foreign market directly; using, at the same time, the wise precaution which the French put in practice, to make the ships so employed take the English ports in their way home; for our great danger is, that they should in that case make their returns in foreign manufactures, against which we cannot guard too carefully. This, and that they should not go largely into manufactures interfering with ours ought to be the only points at which our restrictions should aim. These purposes ought not to be compassed by absolute prohibitions and penalties, which would be unpolitical and unjust, but by the way of diversion, by encouraging them to

fall into fuch things as find a demand with ourselves at home. By this means Great Britain and all its dependencies will have a common interest, they will mutually play into each other's hands, and the trade, so dispersed, will be of infinitely more advantage to us, than if all its feveral articles were produced and manu factured within ourselves.

I venture on these hints concerning restraints on trade, because in fact that of New England rather wants to be supported than to be checked by such restraints. Its trade, in many of its branches, is clearly on the decline; and this circumstance ought to interest us deeply; for very valuable is this colony, if it never fent us any thing, nor took any thing from us, as it is the grand barrier of all the rest; and as it is the principal magazine which supplies our West-Indies, from whence we draw fuch vast advantages. That this valuable colony is far from advancing, will appear clearly from the state of one of the principal branches of its trade, that of ship-building, for four years. In the year 1738, they built at Boston forty-one topsail vessels, burden in all 6324 tons; in 1743, only thirty; in 46, but twenty; in 49, they were reduced to fifteen, making in the whole but 2450 tons of thipping; in fuch a time an aftonishing declension! How it has been fince I have not fufficient information; but, allowing that the decline

em to fall

hė.

nk

or

ec+

of

her

vith

nks,

hem

not

with

with

rried

fend

ctly;

ution

e the

rts in

, that

turns

h we

l that

ctures

only

aim.

paffed

which

by the

has ccased here, yet this is surely sufficient to fet us upon the nicest enquiry into the cause of that decay, and the most effectual measures to retrieve the affairs of so valuable a province; particularly if by any ill-judged or ill-intended schemes, or by any misgovernment, this mischief has happened them.

CHAP. VIII.

New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania. Description of their situation, &c. Short account of their settlement.

T is not certainly known at what time the Swedes and Dutch made their first establishment in North America: but it was certainly posterior to our settlement in Virginia, and prior to that of New England. Swedes, who were no confiderable naval power, had hardly fixt the rudiments of a colony there, ere they deserted it. The inhabitants, without protection or affiftance, were glad to enter into a coalition with the Dutch, who had fettled there upon a better plan, and to submit to the government of the States. The whole tract possessed or claimed by the two nations, whose two colonies were now grown into one, extended from the 38th to the 41st degree of latitude, all along the sea coast. They called it Nova Belgia, or New Netherlands. It continued

28

1-

is

thę

ſta-

er-

nia.

The

ow-

ony

nts,

d to

had

mit

hole

ons,

one,

e of

ed it

con-

healthy, and by no art to be made otherwise.

The New Netherlands were not long in our possession before they were divided into distinct provinces, and laid aside their former appellation. The North-East part, which

joined

joined New England, was called New York, in compliment to the duke of York, who had at first the grant of the whole territory. This province runs up to the Northward on both sides of the river Hudson, for about two hundred miles into the country of the Five Nations or Iroquois; but it is not in any part above forty or fifty miles wide. It comprehends within its limits Long Island, which lies to the South of Connecticut, and is an island inferior to no part of America in excellent ground for the pasturage of horses, oxen, and sheep, or the plentiful produce of every fort of grain.

The part of Nova Belgia, which lay along the ocean, between that and the river Delawar, from the Southern part of New York quite down to Maryland, was granted to Sir George Carteret and others, and called New Jerfey from him, because he had, as the samily still has, estates in the island of that name. This province is bounded upon the West by the river Delawar, which divides it from Pennsylvania. It is in length about one hundred and fifty miles, or thereabouts, and about fifty in breadth.

Pennsylvania, which lies between New York, New Jersey, and Maryland, and only communicates with the sea by the mouth of the river Delawar, is in length about two hundred and fifty miles, and in breadth two hundred.

This

This territory was granted to the famous Mr. William Penn, the fon of Sir William Penn

the admiral, in the year 1680.

d

is

th

3-

a-

rt

e-

es

 $\mathbf{p}_{\mathbf{r}}$

nt

be

rt

ng

a-

rk

Sir

W

i-

ie.

by

m

n-

ut

k,

u-

er

nd

ed.

his

The climate and soil in the three provinces of New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania, admit of no very remarkable difference. In all these, and indeed in all our North American colonies, the land near the sea is in general low, flat, and marshy; at a considerable distance from the sea, it swells into little hills, and then into great even ridges of mountains, which hold their course, for the most part, North-East, and South-West. The foil throughout these three provinces is in general extremely fruitful; abounding not only in its native grain the Indian corn, but in all fuch as have been naturalized there from Europe. Wheat in fuch abundance, and of so excellent a quality, that few parts of the world, for the tract which is cultivated, exceed it in the one or the other of these particulars; nor in parley, oats, rye, buck-wheat, and every fort of grain which we have here. They have a great number of horned cattle, horses, sheep, and hogs. All our European poultry abound there; game of all kinds is wonderfully plenty; deer of several species; hares of a kind peculiar to America, but inferior in relish to ours; wild turkies, of a vast size and equal goodness; a beautiful species of pheasants, only found in this country. Every species of herbs

188 An Account of the European

herbs or roots, which we force in our gardens, grows here with great ease; and every species of fruit; but some, as those of peaches and

melons, in far greater perfection.

Their forests abound in excellent timber. the oak, the ash, the beech, the chesnut, the cedar, and walnut, the cypress, the hickory, the faffafras, and the pine. In all parts of our plantations, comprehending New York to the Northward, quite to the Southern extremity, the woods are full of wild vines of three or four species, all different from those we have in Europe. But, whether from some fault in their nature, or in the climate, or the foil where they grow, or, what is much more probable, from a fault in the planters, they have yet produced no wine that deferves to be mentioned. It may be remarked in general of the timber of these provinces, that it is not so good for shipping as that of New England and Nova Scotia. The further Southward you go, the timber becomes less compact, and rives eafily; which property, as it makes it more useful for staves, renders it less ferviceable for ships.

They raise in all these provinces, but much the most largely in Pennsylvania, great quantities of flax; hemp is a promising article. Nor are they deficient in minerals. In New York, a good deal of iron is found. In New Jersey, a very rich copper mine has been opened, $\mathbf{b}t$

r,

10

y,

of

to

e-

of

) se

ne

he

re

ey

be

ral

is

gh-

n-

ch

n-

le.

ew

ew

en

ŀd,

opened. There is no manner of doubt but in time, when the people come to multiply sufficiently, and experience and want have made them ingenious in opening resources for trade, these colonies will become as remarkable for useful metals as they now are for grain. These three provinces, as are all those we have in North America, are extremely well watered. They have however observed in New England, that, as they clear the country, a vast number of little brooks are quite lost, and the mills upon them by this loss rendered useless. They even observe, that this cutting down of the woods has affected the river Connecticut itself, the largest in New England, and that it has grown distinguishably shallower. I do not know whether the fame remark has been made in Pennsylvania and New York. whatever they have lost in water, which, where there is such a plenty, is no great loss, has been amply compensated by the great falubrity of the air, which has arisen from the cultivation of the country. At present those I describe are, for the greater part, as healthy as can be wished.

As the climate and soil of the provinces of New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania, are, with very little variation, the same, so there is no difference in the commodities in which they trade, which are wheat, slour, barley, oats, Indian corn, peas, beef, pork, cheese,

butter,

butter, cyder, beer, flax, hemp and flax seed, linseed oil, fur and deer-skins, staves, lumber, and iron. Their markets are the same with those which the people of New England use; and these colonies have a share in the logwood trade, and that which is carried on with the Spanish and French plantations.

CHAP. IX.

City of New York. Its flourishing trade. Albany. The Indian trade there. The Iroquois or Five Nations.

THE province of New York has two cities; the first is called by the name of the province itself. It was denominated New Amsterdam when the Dutch possessed it, but it has changed its name along with its masters. This city is most commodiously situated for trade, upon an excellent harbour, in an island called Manahatton, about four-teen miles long, though not above one or two broad. This island lies just in the mouth of the river Hudson, which discharges itself here after a long course. This is one of the noblest rivers in America. It is navigable upwards of two hundred miles. The tide slows one hundred and sifty.

The city of New York contains upwards of two thousand houses, and above twelve thousand inhabitants, the descendants of Dutch and

English.

English. It is well and commodiously built, extending a mile in length, and about half that in breadth, and has a very good aspect from the sea; but it is by no means properly fortified. The houses are built of brick in the Dutch taste; the itreets not regular, but clean and well paved. There is one large church built for the church of England worship; and three others, a Dutch, a French, and a Lutheran. The town has a very flourishing trade, and in which great profits are made. The merchants are wealthy, and the people in general most comfortably provided for, and with a moderate labour. From the year 1749 to 1750, two hundred and thirty-two vessels have been entered in this port, and two hundred and eighty fix cleared outwards. In these vessels were shipped six thousand seven hundred and thirty-one tons of provisions, chiefly flour, and a vast quantity of grain; of which I have no particular account. In the year 1755, the export of flax feed to Ireland amounted to 12,528 hogsheads. The inhabitants are between eighty and an hundred thousand; the lower class easy; the better rich, and hospitable; great freedom of society; and the entry to foreigners made easy by a general toleration of all religious persuasions. In a word, this province yields to no part of America in the healthfulness of its air, and the fertility of its foil. It is much superior in the great

,

wo ne

led its illy ur,

urwo of

left irds one

ls of louand lish.

great convenience of water carriage, which speedily and at the slightest expense carries the product of the remotest farms to a certain

and profitable market.

Upon the river Hudson, about one hundred and fifty miles from New York, is Albany; a town of not so much note for its number of houses or inhabitants, as for the great trade which is carried on with the Indians, and indeed, by connivance, with the French for the use of the same people. This trade takes off a great quantity of coarse woollen goods, such as strouds and dustils; and with these, guns, hatchets, knives, hoes, kettles, powder and shot; besides shirts and cloaths ready made, and several other articles. Here it is that the treaties and other transactions between us and the Iroquois Indians are negotiated.

This nation, or combination of Five nations, united by an ancient and inviolable league amongst themselves, were the oldest, the most steady, and most effectual ally we have found amongst the Indians. This people, by their unanimity, firmness, military skill, and policy, have raised themselves to be the greatest and most formidable power in all America; they have reduced a vast number of nations, and brought under their power a territory twice as large as the kingdom of France; but they have not increased their subjects in proportion. As their manner of warring is implacable and barbarous,

hey

and

e as

hey ion.

and ous,

e

barbarous, they reign the lords of a prodigious defert, inhabited only by a few scattered infignificant tribes, whom they have permitted to live out of a contempt of their power, and who are all in the lowest state of subjection. And yet this once mighty and victorious nation, though it has always used the policy of incorporating with itself a great many of the prisoners they make in war, is in a very declining condition. About fixty years ago, it was computed, that they had ten thousand fighting men; at this day, they cannot raise upwards of fifteen hundred. So much have wars, epidemical diseases, and the unnatural union of the vices of civilized nations with the manners of favages, reduced this once numerous people. But they are not only much lessened at this day in their numbers, but in their disposition to employ what numbers they have left in our fervice. Amongst other neglects, which I have no pleafure in mentioning and no hopes of feeing amended, this of inattention, or worse treatment, of the Indians, is one, and a capital one. The Iroquois have lately had three other nations added to their confederacy, fo that they ought now to be confidered as eight; and the whole confederacy feems much more inclined to the French interest than ours.

Vol. II.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

New Jersey. Its trade; and inhabitants.

TEW Jersey, by the perpetual disputes which subsisted between the people and the proprietaries whilst it continued a proprietary government, was kept for a long time in a very feeble state; but, within a few years, it has begun to reap some of the advantages which it might have had earlier from the proper management of fo fine a province and lo advantageous a fituation. They raise very great quantities of grain at present, and are increased to near fixty thousand souls; but they have yet no town of any consequence. Perth Amboy, which is their capital, has not upwards of two hundred houses; and, though this town has a very fine harbour, capable of receiving and securing ships of great burden, yet, as the people of New Jersey have been used to send their produce to the markets of New York and Philadelphia, to which they are contiguous, they find it hard, as it always is in such cases, to draw the trade out of the old channel; for there the correspondencies are fixed, the method of dealing established, credits given, and a ready market for needy dealers, who in all countries are sufficiently numerous; so that the trade of this town, which

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 195 is the only town of any trade worth notice in New Jersey, is still inconsiderable; in the year 1751, only forty-one vessels have entered inwards, and only thirty-eight cleared out, in which were exported fix thousand four hundred and twenty-four barrels of flour; one hundred and fixty-eight thousand weight of bread; three hundred and fourteen barrels of beef and pork; seventeen thousand nine hundred and forty-one bushels of grain; fourteen thousand weight of hemp; with some butter, hams, beer, flax-seed, bar-iron, and lumber.

ıg

W

n-

m ice ile

ind

but

not

ugh

e of

den,

been

ts of

they

ways

f the

cre-

deal-

v nu-

yhich is

CHAP. XI.

Account of William Penn. The principles on which he settled the colony. His death.

Find it of late a notion pretty current, that proprietary governments are a fort of check to the growth of the colonies which they superintend. It is certain, that abuses have been, and still do subsist, in that species of government; and abuses of as bad a kind may, I believe, be found, by persons of no great penetration, in all our governments; but, if there were any truth in this observation, the province of Pennsylvania would prove an illustrious exception to it.

William Penn, in his capacity of a divine and of a moral writer, is certainly not of the

. 5

first rank; and his works are of no great estimation, except amongst his own people; but, in his capacity of a legislator and the founder of so flourishing a commonwealth, he deserves great honour amongst all mankind; a commonwealth, which, in the space of about seventy years, from a beginning of a few hundreds of refugees and indigent men, has grown to be a numerous and flourishing people; a people, who, from a perfect wilderness, have brought their territory to a state of great cultivation, and filled it with wealthy and populous towns; and who, in the midst of a fierce and lawless race of men, have preserved themselves, with unarmed hands and passive principles, by the rules of moderation and justice, better than any other people has done by policy and arms. For Mr. Penn, when, for his father's services and by his own interest at court, he obtained the inheritance of this country and its government, faw that he could make the grant of value to him only by rendering the country as agreeable to all people, as eafe and good government could make it. To this purpose, he began by purchasing the soil, at a very low rate indeed, from the original possessions, to whom it was of little use. By this cheap act of justice at the beginning, he made all his dealings for the future the more easy, by prepossessing the Indians with a favourable opinion of him and his defigns. The other

The ther

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. other part of his plan, which was, to people this country after he had fecured the possession of it, he saw much facilitated by the uneasiness of his brethren the Quakers in England, who, refuting to pay tythes and other church dues, fuffered a great deal from the spiritual courts. Their high opinion of and regard for the man, who was an honour to their new church, made them the more ready to follow him over the vast ocean into an untried climate and country. Neither was he himfelf wanting in any thing which could encourage them. For he expended large fums in transporting and finding them in all necesfaries; and, not aiming at a fudden profit, he disposed of his land at a very light purchase. But what crowned all was, that noble charter of privileges, by which he made them as free as any people in the world; and which has fince drawn such vast numbers, of so many different perfuasions and such various countries, to put themselves under the protection of his laws. He made the most perfect freedom, both religious and civil, the basis of this establishment; and this has done more towards the fettling of the province, and towards the fettling of it in a strong and permanent manner, than the wifest regulations could have done upon any other plan. All persons who profess to believe one God, are freely tolerated; those who believe in Jesus Christ, of what198 An Account of the European ever denomination, are not excluded from em-

ployments and posts.

This great man lived to see an extensive country called after his own name; he lived to see it peopled by his own wisdom, the people free and flourishing, and the most flourishing people in it of his own persuasion; he lived to lay the foundations of a splendid and wealthy city; he lived to see it promise every thing from the situation which he himself had chosen, and the encouragement which he himself had given it: he lived to see all this; but

he died in the Fleet prison.

It is but just, that, in such a subject, we should allot a little room, to do honour to those great men, whose virtue and generosity have contributed to the peopling of the earth, and to the freedom and happiness of mankind; who have preferred the interest of a remote posterity, and times unknown, to their own fortunes, and to the quiet and security of their own lives. Now, Great Britain, and all America, reap great benefits from his labours and his losses; and his posterity have a vast estate out of the quit-rents of that province, whose establishment was the ruin of their predecessor's moderate fortune.

ve

ed

he

u-

he nd

ery

ad

m-

but

we

· to

fity

rth,

an-

of a

heir

y of

d all

ours

vaft

nce,

their

AP.

Inhabitants of Pennsylvania. Variety of nations and religions there. Pacific principles of the Quakers. Reflexions on the present state of affairs there.

ENNSYLVANIA is inhabited by upwards of two hundred and fifty thousand people, half of whom are Germans, Swedes, or Dutch. Here you fee the Quakers, Churchmen, Calvinists, Lutherans, Catholics, Methodists, Menists, Moravians, Independents, the Anabaptists, and the Dumplers, a fort of German fect, that live in fomething like a religious fociety, wear long beards, and a habit refembling that of friars. In short, the diverfity of people, religions, nations, and languages here, is prodigious, and the harmony in which they live together no less edifying. For, though every man, who wishes well to religion, is forry to fee the diversity which prevails, and would by all humane and honest methods endeavour to prevent it; yet, when once the evil has happened, when there is no longer an union of sentiments, it is glorious to preserve at least an union of affections; it is a beautiful prospect, to see men take and give an equal liberty; to fee them live, if not as belonging to the same church,

yet to the same Christian religion; and if not to the same religion, yet to the same great fraternity of mankind. I do not observe, that the Quakers, who had, and who still have in a great measure, the power in their hands, have made use of it in any fort to persecute; except in the fingle case of George Keith, whom they first imprisoned, and then banished out of the province. This Keith was originally a minister of the Church of England, then a Quaker, and afterwards returned to his former ministry. But whilst he remained with the friends, he was a most troublesome and litigious man; was for pushing the particularities of Quakerism to yet more extravagant lengths, and for making new refinements, even where the most enthusiastic thought they had gone far enough; which rath and turbulent conduct raised such a storm, as shook the church, he then adhered to, to the very foundations.

This little fally into intolerance, as it is a fingle instance, and with great provocation, ought by no means to be imputed to the principles of the Quakers, considering the ample and humane latitude they have allowed in all other respects. It was certainly a very right policy to encourage the importation of foreigners into Pennsylvania, as well as into our other colonies. By this we are great gainers, without any diminution of the inhabitants of

Great Britain. But it has been frequently obferved, and, as it should feem, very justly complained of, that they are left still foreigners, and likely to continue fo for many generations; as they have schools taught, books printed, and even the common news paper in their own language; by which means, and as they possess large tracts of the country without any intermixture of English, there is no appearance of their blending and becoming one people with us. This certainly is a great irregularity, and the greater, as these foreigners, by their industry, frugality, and a hard way of living, in which they greatly exceed our people, have in a manner thrust them out in feveral places; so as to threaten the colony with the danger of being wholly foreign in language, manners, and perhaps even inclinations. In the year 1750, were imported into Pennsylvania and its dependencies four thousand three hundred and seventeen Germans, whereas of British and Irish but one thousand arrived; a considerable number, if it was not fo vaftly overbalanced by that of the foreigners.

I do by no means think that this fort of transplantations ought to be discouraged; I only observe, along with others, that the manner of their settlement ought to be regulated, and means sought to have them naturalized in

reality.

30t

eat

hat

na

ave

ite;

ith,

ish-

ori-

ind,

his

ined

ome

arti-

ava-

ents,

they

tur-

hook

very

t is a

tion,

prin-

mple

in all

right

f fo-

o our

ners,

its of

Great

The

The present troubles have very unhappily reversed the system so long pursued, and with fuch great fuccess, in this part of the world. The Pennsylvanians have suffered severely by the incursions of the favage Americans as well as their neighbours; but the Quakers could not be prevailed upon, by what did not directly affect those of their own communion (for they were out of the way of mischief in the more settled parts), to relinquish their pacific principles; for which reason, a confiderable opposition, in which, however, we must do the Quakers the justice to observe they were not unanimous, was made, both within their affembly as well as without doors, against granting any money to carry on the war; and the fame, or a more vigorous opposition, was made against passing a militia bill. A bill of this kind has at length passed, but fcarcely fuch as the circumstances of the country and the exigencies of the times required. It may perhaps appear an error, to have placed so great a part of the government in the hands of men, who hold principles directly opposite to its end and design. peaceable, industrious, honest people, the Quakers cannot be too much cherished; but surely they cannot themselves complain, that when, by their opinions, they make themselves sheep, they should not be entrusted with the office, fince they have not the nature of dogs. CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

h

d.

VC ell

ld

li-

on

ief

eir

n-

we

rve

oth

out

on

op-

sill.

but the

re-

, to

nent di-

As a

ua-

urehen,

eep,

fice,

AP.

Description of Philadelphia. Its trade. Number of people in Pennsylvania. Its flourishing condition. Few Negroes there.

HERE are so many good towns in the province of Pennsylvania, even exceeding the capitals of some other provinces, that nothing could excuse our passing them by, had not Philadelphia drawn our attention wholly to itself. This city stands upon a tongue of land, immediately at the confluence of two fine rivers, the Delawar and the Schulkil. It is disposed in the form of an oblong, defigned to extend two miles from river to river; but the buildings do not extend above a mile and an half on the West side of Delawar in length, and not more than half a mile where the town is broadest. The longest stretch, when the original plan can be fully executed, is to compose eight parallel streets, all of two miles in length; these are to be intersected by fixteen others, each in length a mile, broad, fpacious, and even; with proper spaces left for the public buildings, churches, and market-places. In the center is a square of ten acres, round which most of the public buildings are disposed. The two principal streets of the city are each one hundred feet wide,

and most of the houses have a small garden and orchard; from the rivers are cut several canals, equally agreeable and beneficial. quays are spacious and fine; the principal quay is two hundred feet wide, and to this a vessel of five hundred tons may lay her broadfide. The warehouses are large, numerous and commodious, and the docks for ship-building every way well adapted to their purposes. A great number of veffels have been built here; twenty have been upon the flocks at a time. The city contains, exclusive of warehouses and outhouses, about two thousand houses; most of them of brick, and well built; it is faid, there are feveral of them worth four or five thousand pounds. The inhabitants are now about thirteen thousand.

There are in this city a great number of very wealthy merchants; which is no way furprifing, when one confiders the great trade which it carries on with the English, French, Spanish, and Dutch, colonies in America; with the Azores, the Canaries, and the Madeira islands; with Great Britain and Ireland; with Spain, Portugal and Holland, and the great profits which are made in many branches of this commerce. Besides the quantity of all kinds of the produce of this province which is brought down the rivers Delawar and Schulkil (the former of which is navigable, for vessels of one fort or other,

more than two hundred miles above Philadelphia) the Dutch employ between eight and nine thousand waggons, drawn each by four horses, in bringing the product of their farms to this market. In the year 1749, three hundred and three vessels entered inwards at this port, and two hundred and ninety-one cleared outwards. There are, at the other ports of this province, custom-house officers; but the foreign trade in these places is not worth notice.

at

e.

es

S;

is

or

ire

of

ay

nde

ch,

ca;

Ia-

hd;

the

hes

tity

nce

De-

ich

ner,

The city of Philadelphia, though, as it may be judged, far from compleating the original plan, yet, so far as it is built, is carried on conformable to it, and increases in the number and beauty of its buildings every day. And as for the province, of which this city is the capital, there is no part of British America in a more growing condition. fome years, more people have transported themselves into Pennsylvania, than into all the other fettlements together. In 1729, fix thousand two hundred and eight persons came to fettle here as passengers or servants, four fifths of whom at least were from Ireland. In short, this province has increased so greatly from the time of its first establishment, that, whereas lands were given by Mr. Penn the founder of the colony at the rate of twenty pounds for a thousand acres, referving only a shilling every hundred acres for quit-rent; and

this in some of the best situated parts of the province: yet now, at a great distance from navigation, land is granted at twelve pounds the hundred acres, and a quit-rent of sour shillings reserved; and the land which is near Philadelphia rents for twenty shillings the acre. In many places, and at the distance of several miles from that city, land sells for twenty years purchase.

The Pennsylvanians are an industrious and hardy people; they are most of them substantial, though but a few of the landed people can be considered as rich; but they are all well lodged, well fed, and, for their condition, well clad too; and this at the more easy rate, as the inferior people manusacture most of their own wear, both linens and woollens. There are but few Blacks, not in all the fortieth part of the people of the province.

CHAP. XIV.

Situation, &c. of Virginia. Conveniency of its rivers for navigation. Beasts and birds of the country. The opossum.

THE whole country which the English now possess in North America, was at first called Virginia; but, by the parcelling of several portions of it into distinct grants and govern-

governments, the country which still bears the name is now reduced to that tract which has the river Potowmack upon the North; the bay of Chesapeak upon the East; and Carolina upon the South. To the Westward, the grants extend it to the South-Sea; but their planting goes no further than the great Allegany mountains, which boundaries leave this province in length two hundred and forty miles, and in breadth about two hundred, lying between the fifty-fifth and fortieth

degrees of North latitude.

r,

r

e

or

br

o-

re li-

re

are .nd

in

he

rits

s of

dish

is at

g of

and ern-

The whole face of this country is so extremely low towards the fea, that, when you are come even within fifteen fathom foundings, you can hardly distinguish land from the mast head. However, all this coast of America has one useful particularity, that you know your distance exactly by the soundings, which uniformly and gradually diminish as you approach the land. The trees appear as if they rose out of the water, and afford the stranger a very uncommon, and not a disagreeable, view. In failing to Virginia or Maryland, you pass a streight, between two points of land, called the Capes of Virginia, which opens a passage into the bay of Chesapeak, one of the largest and safest bays perhaps in the world; for it enters the country near three hundred miles from the South to the North, having the Eastern side of Maryland,

and a finall portion of Virginia on the fame peninfula, to cover it from the Atlantic ocean. This bay is about eighteen miles broad for a confiderable way, and feven where it is narrowest, the waters in most places being nine fathom deep. Through its whole extent, it receives, both on the Eastern and Western side, a vast number of fine navigable rivers. Not to mention those of Maryland; from the side of Virginia, it receives James River, York River, the Rappahannock, and the Potowmack.

All these great rivers, in the order they are here fet down from South to North, discharge themselves, with several smaller ones, into the bay of Chesapeak; and they are all not only navigable themselves for very large vessels a prodigious way into the country, but have fo many creeks, and receive such a number of fmaller navigable rivers, as renders the communication of all parts of this country infinitely more easy than that of any country, without exception, in the world. The Potowmack is navigable for near two hundred miles, being nine miles broad at its mouth, and for a vast way not less than seven. The other three are navigable upwards of eighty, and in the windings of their feveral courses approach one another so nearly, that the distance between one and the other is in some parts not more than ten, sometimes not above five miles:

miles; whereas in others there is fifty miles space between each of these rivers. The planters load and unload vessels of great burden each at his own door; which, as their commodities are bulky, and of small value in proportion to their bulk, is a very fortunate circumstance, else they could never afford to send their tobacco to market low as they sell it, and charged, as it is in England, with a

duty of fix times its original value.

it

e,

ot

de

rk

w-

are

rge

the

only

re so

r of

om-

in-

ntry,

tow-

niles,

d for

other

nd in

roach

e be-

ts not

e five

The climate and foil of Virginia was undoubtedly much heightened in the first descriptions, for political reasons; but, after making all the necessary abatements which experience fince taught us, we still find it a most excellent country. The heats in fummer are excessively great, but not without the allay of refreshing sea breezes. The weather is changeable, and the changes fudden and violent. winter frosts come on without the least warning. After a warm day, towards the fetting in of winter, so intense a cold often succeeds as to freeze over the broadest and deepest of their great rivers in one night; but these frosts, as well as their rains, are rather violent than of long continuance. They have frequent and terrible thunder and lightning, but it does rarely any mischief. In general the sky is clear, and the air thin, pure, and penetrating.

The foil in the low grounds of Virginia is a dark fat mould, which, for many years, with-Vol. II.

210 An Account of the European

out any manure, yields plentifully whatever is committed to it. The foil, as you leave the rivers, becomes light and fandy, is fooner exhausted than the low country, but is yet of a warm and generous nature, which, helped by a kindly sun, yields tobacco and corn extremely well. There is no better wheat than what is produced in this province and Maryland; but the culture of tobacco employs all their attention, and almost all their hands; so that they scarcely cultivate wheat enough for their own use.

It may be judged, from the climate and the foil I have described, in what excellence and plenty every fort of fruit is found in Virginia. Their forests are full of timber trees of all kinds; and their plains are covered for almost the whole year with a prodigious number of slowers, and slowering shrubs, of colours so rich, and of a scent so fragrant, that they occasioned the name of Florida to be originally given to this country. This country produces several medicinal herbs and roots, particularly the snake root; and of late the celebrated ginseng of the Chinese has been discovered there.

Horned cattle and hogs have multiplied almost beyond belief; though at the first settlement the country was utterly destitute of these animals. The meat of the former is as much below the slesh of our oxen, as that of

the latter exceeds that of our hogs. The animals natural to the country are deer, of which there are great numbers; a fort of panther or tiger; bears, wolves, foxes, racoons, squirrels, wild cats, and one very uncommon animal called the oposium. This creature is about the fize of a cat, and, besides the belly which it has in common with all others, has a false one beneath it, with a pretty large aperture at the end towards the hinder legs. Within this bag or belly, on the usual parts of the common belly, are a number of teats; upon these, when the female of this creature conceives, the young are formed, and there they hang like fruit upon the stalk, until they grow in bulk and weight to their appointed fize; then they drop off, and are received in the false belly, from which they go out at pleasure, and in which they take refuge when any danger threatens them.

They have all our forts of tame and wild fowl in equal perfection, and some which we have not; and a vast number of birds of various kinds, valuable for their beauty or their note. The white owl of Virginia is far larger than the species which we have, and is all over of a bright silver-coloured plumage, except one black spot upon his breast; they have the nightingale called from the country, a most beautiful one, whose feathers are crimson and blue; the mocking bird, thought to excel

P 2

all

d alttlee of
is as
at of
the

ly

13

d;

eir

hat

the

and

nia.

all

most

er of

rs fo

OC-

hally

uces

larly

ered

all others in his own note, and imitating the notes of every one; the rock bird, very fociable, and his fociety very agreeable by the fweetness of his music; the humming bird, the smallest of all the winged creation, and the most beautiful, all arrayed in scarlet, green, and gold. This bird is faid to live by licking off the dew that adheres to the flowers; he is too delicate to be brought alive into England. The sea-coasts and rivers of Virginia abound not only in feveral of the species of fish known in Europe, but in most of those kinds which are peculiar to America. The reptiles are many; it were tedious to enumerate all the kinds of ferpents bred here; the rattle fnake is the principal, and too well known in general to need any description.

CHAP. XV.

Towns in Virginia few and small. Tobacco, its cultivation. Trade in that and other commodities. People in Virginia. White and Black.

HE great commodiousness of navigation and the scarcity of handicrastsmen have rendered all the attempts of the government to establish towns in Virginia inessectual. James's town, which was anciently the capital, is dwindled into an insignificant

nificant village; and Williamsburg, though the capital at present, the seat of the governor, the place of holding the assembly and courts of justice, and a college for the study of arts and sciences, is yet but a small town. However, in this town are the best public buildings in British America. The college, one hundred and thirty-sive feet long in front, resembling Chelsea hospital; the capital directly facing it, at the other end of the design of a noble street, not unlike the college in the sassina and the size of the building, where the assembly and courts of justice are held, and the public offices kept; and the church, in the form of a cross, large and well ornamented.

The great staple commodity of this country, as well as Maryland, is tobacco. This plant is aboriginal in America, and of very ancient use, though neither so generally cultivated nor so well manufactured as it has been since the coming of the Europeans. When at its just height, it is as tall as an ordinary-fized man; the stalk is straight, hairy, and clammy; the leaves alternate, of a faded yellowish green, and towards the lower part of the plant of a great fize. The feeds of tobacco are first sown in beds, from whence they are transplanted, the first rainy weather, into a ground disposed into little hillocks like an hop garden. In a month's time from their transplantation they become a foot high; they

P 3

thin

igaiftsthe ginia ncinfig-

ry

ne

d,

nd

n,

ng is

nd.

ınd fish

nds

iles all

ttle

n in

, its

and

then top them, and prune off the lower. leaves, and with great attention clean them from weeds and worms twice a week; in about fix weeks after, they attain to their full growth, and they begin then to turn brownish. By these marks they judge the tobacco to be ripe. They cut down the plants as fast as they ripen, heap them up and let them lie a night to fweat; the next day they carry them to the tobacco house, which is built to admit as much air as is confishent with keeping out rain, where they are hung separately to dry, for four or five weeks; then they take them down in moist weather, for else they will crumble to dust. After this they are laid upon flicks, and covered up close to sweat for a week or two longer; the fervants strip and fort them, the top being the best, the bottom the worst tobacco; then they make them up in hogsheads, or form them into rolls. feafons must be carefully laid hold on for all this work, else the tobacco will not be sufficiently pliable.

In trade they distinguish two sorts of tobacco, the first is called Aranokoe, from Maryland and the Northern parts of Virginia; this is strong and hot in the mouth, but it sells very well in the markets of Holland, Germany, and the North. The other sort is called sweet-scented, the best of which is from James's and York rivers in the Southappears to lay but a very inconsiderable burden

h. upon the people in England; all the weight эe in reality falls upon the planter, who is kept as down by the lowness of the original price; and as we have two provinces which deal in the same commodity, if the people of Virm nit ginia were to take measures to straiten the out market and raise the price, those of Maryry, land would certainly take the advantage of it; em the people of Virginia would take the same vill advantage of those of Maryland in a like case. aid They have no prospect of ever bettering their for condition; and they are the less able to enand dure it as they live in general luxuriously, and om to the full extent of their fortunes. Thereup fore any failure in the sale of their goods Wet brings them heavily in debt to the merchants in London, who get mortgages on their estates, which are confumed to the bone, with the canker of an eight per cent usury. But, howpacever the planters may complain of the tobacco

n

n ll

ary-

nia;

ut it

and,

rt is

h is

uth-

ern

the far greater part of the profits of which come to the English merchant, brings almost as great a sum annually into the kingdom. To

trade, the revenue flourishes by it, for it draws

near three hundred thousand a year from this

one article only; and the exported tobacco,

fay nothing of the great advantage we derive

216 An Account of the European

from being supplied from our own colonies with that for which the rest of Europe pays ready money, besides the employment of two hundred large vessels, and a proportionable number of seamen, which are occupied in this trade. From us the Virginians take every article for convenience or ornament which they use; their own manufacture does not deferve to be mentioned. The two colonies export about eighty thousand hogsheads of tobacco of eight hundred weight. They likewise trade largely with the West-Indies in lumber, pitch, tar, corn, and provisions. They send home slax, hemp, iron, staves, and walnut and cedar plank.

The number of White people in Virginia, is between fixty and feventy thousand; and they are growing every day more numerous, by the migration of the Irish, who, not succeeding fo well in Pennfylvania as the more frugal and industrious Germans, sell their lands in that province to the latter, and take up new ground in the remote counties in Virginia, Maryland, and North Carolina. These are chiefly Presbyterians from the Northern part of Ireland, who in America are generally called Scotch Irish. In Virginia there are likewise settled a considerable number of French refugees; but much the larger part of the inhabitants are the Negroe slaves, who cannot be much fewer than a hundred thou-

fand

in ry ch leics of sein ney alnia, and , by eedugal s in up

Vir-

heſe

hern

eral-

are

r of

rt of

who

houfand

10

le

fand fouls; they annually import into the two tobacco colonies between three and four thousand of these slaves. The Negroes here do not stand in need of such vast recruits as the West-India stock; they rather increase than diminish; a blessing derived from a more moderate labour, better food, and a more healthy climate. The inhabitants of Virginia are a chearful, hospitable, and many of them a genteel, though something vain and ostentatious, people; they are for the greater part of the established church of Englaad; nor until lately did they tolerate any other. Now they have some few meeting-houses of Presbyterians and Quakers.

CHAP. XVI.

Attempts to settle Virginia, three unsuccessful.

Settled at last by lord Delawar.

HIS of Virginia is the most ancient of our colonies. Though, strictly speaking, the first attempts to settle a colony were not made in Virginia, but in that part of North Carolina which immediately borders upon it. Sir Walter Raleigh, the most extraordinary genius of his own or perhaps any other time, a penetrating statesman, an accomplished courtier, a deep scholar, a fine writer, a great soldier, and one of the ablest seamen in the world;

world; this vast genius, that pierced so far and ran through fo many things, was of a fiery excentric kind, which led him into daring expeditions and uncommon projects, which, not being understood by a timid prince and envied and hated by the rivals he had in fo many ways of life, ruined him at last. person, he ran infinite risks in Guiana in fearch of gold mines: and when this country was first discovered, he looked through the work of an age at one glance, and faw how advantageous it might be made to the trade of England. He was the first man in England who had a right conception of the advantages of settlements abroad; he was then the only person who had a thorough infight into trade, and who saw clearly the proper methods of promoting it. He applied to court, and got together a company, which was composed of several persons of distinction and feveral eminent merchants, who agreed to open a trade and fettle a colony in that part of the world, which, in honour of queen Elizabeth, he called Virginia.

Raleigh had too much business upon his hands at court, and found too few to second him in his design, to enable him to support the establishment with the spirit in which he began it. If ever any design had an ominous beginning, and seemed to forbid any attempts for carrying it on, it was that of the first set-

tlement

s,

ce

in

In

in

try

gh

aw

the

in in

the

was

ugh

the

blied

hich

Rion

reed

part

Eli-

n his

cond

pport

ch he

inous

empts

tlement of Virginia. Near half of the first colony was destroyed by the savages; and the rest, consumed and worn down by fatigue and famine, deserted the country, and returned home in defpair. The fecond colony was cut off, to a man, in a man, unknown; but they were supposed to be destroyed by the Indians. The third had the same dismal fate; and the fourth, quarrelling amongst themfelves, neglecting their agriculture to hunt for gold, and provoking the Indians by their infolent and unguarded behaviour, lost several of their people, and were returning, the poor remains of them, in a famishing and desperate condition, to England, when just in the mouth of Chesapeak bay they met the lord Delawar, with a fquadron loaded with provision, and every thing for their relief and defence, who persuaded them to return.

This nobleman travelled with as much zeal and affiduity to cherifh and support the froward infancy of this unpromising colony, as some have used in its better times for purposes of another kind. Regardless of his life, and inattentive to his fortune, he entered upon this long and dangerous voyage, and accepted this barren province, which had nothing of a government but its anxieties and its cares, merely for the service of his country; and he had no other reward than that retired and inward satisfaction, which a good

mind

mind feels in indulging its own propenfity to virtue, and the prospect of those just honours which the latest posterity will take a pleasure in bestowing upon those, who prefer the interest of posterity to their own. After he had prevailed upon the people to return, he comforted them under their misfortunes, he pointed out their causes, and uniting the tenderness of a father with the steady severity of a magistrate, he healed their divisions, and reconciled them to authority and government, by making them feel by his conduct what a

bleffing it could be made.

When he had fettled the colony within itfelf, his next care was to put them upon a proper footing with regard to the Indians, whom he found very haughty and affuming on account of the late miserable state of the English; but, by some well-timed and vigorous steps, he humbled them, shewed he had power to chastise them, and courage to exert that power; and, after having awed them into very peaceable dispositions and settled his colony in a very growing condition, he retired home for the benefit of his health, which, by his constant attention to business and the air of an uncultivated country, had been impaired; but he left his fon, with the spirit of his father, his deputy; and Sir Thomas Gates, Sir George Summers, the honourable George Piercy, Sir Ferdinand Wenman, and Mr. Newport,

Newport, for his council. These, with other persons of rank and fortune, attended him on this expedition, which gave a credit to the colony. Though there are in England many young gentlemen of fortunes disproportioned to their rank, I sear we should not see the names of so many of them engaged in an expedition, which had no better appearance than this had at that time.

n

t-

ed

a

nd

nt,

it-

n a

ns,

ing

the

go-

had

xert

nto

his

ired

by

r of

ed;

fa-

Sir

orge

Mr.

ort,

Lord Delawar did not forget the colony on his return to England; but, confidering himfelf as nearer the fountain head, thought it his duty to turn the spring of the royal favour more copiously upon the province which he superintended. For eight years together he was indefatigable in doing every thing that could tend to the peopling, the support, and the good government of this settlement; and he died in the pursuit of the same object in his voyage to Virginia, with a large supply of people, cloathing and goods.

It is one of the most necessary, and I am sure it is one of the most pleasing, parts of this design to do justice to the names of those men, who, by their greatness of mind, their wisdom and their goodness, have brought into the pale of civility and religion these rude and uncultivated parts of the globe; who could discern the rudiments of a future people, wanting only time to be unfolded in the seed; who could perceive, amidst the losses and disap-

pointments

pointments and expences of a beginning colony, the great advantages to be derived to their country from fuch undertakings; and who could purfue them in spite of the malignity and narrow wisdom of the world. ancient world had its Osiris and Erichthonius. who taught them the use of grain; their Bacchus, who instructed them in the culture of the vine; and their Orpheus and Linus, who first built towns and formed civil societies. The people of America will not fail, when time has made things venerable, and when an intermixture of fable has moulded useful truths into popular opinions, to mention with equal gratitude, and perhaps fimilar heightening circumstances, her Columbus, her Castro, her Gasca, her De Poincy, her Delawar, her Baltimore, and her Penn.

CHAP. XVII.

Virginia holds out against Cromwell, and is reduced. Bacon's rebellion. Its causes. Bacon dies. Peace restored.

HE colony of Virginia was so fast rooted by the care of Lord Delawar, that it was enabled to stand two terrible storms; two massacres made by the Indians, in which the whole colony was nearly cut off; and to subdue that people, so as to put it

b

it utterly out of their power for many years

past to give them the least disturbance.

In the fatal troubles which brought Charles the first to the block, and overtuned the constitution of England, many of the cavaliers sled for refuge to this colony, which, by the general disposition of the inhabitants and the virtue of Sir William Berkley, held out for the crown, until the parliament, rather by stratagem than force, reduced them. And what is remarkable, if it may be depended upon with any certainty, they deposed Cromwell's governor, set up Sir William Berkley again, and declared for king Charles the second, a good while even before the news of Oliver's death could arrive in America.

n

ul

th

n-

o,

fast

rar.

ble

ns,

cut

put it After the restoration, there is nothing very interesting in their history; except that soon after, a sort of rebellion arose in the province, from mismanagements in the government, from the decay of their trade, and from exorbitant grants inconsiderately made, which included the settled property of many people; these grievances raised a general discontent amongst the planters, which was fomented and brought to blaze out into an actual war, by a young gentleman whose name was Bacon. He was an agreeable man, of a graceful presence and winning carriage. He had been bred to the law, had a lively and fluent expression.

pression, fit to set off a popular cause, and to influence men who were ready to hear whatever could be said to colour in a proper manner what was already strongly drawn by their own feelings. This man, by a specious, or perhaps a real, though ill-judged, regard for the public good, finding the governor flow in his preparations against the Indians, who were at that time ravaging the frontiers of the province, took up arms, without any commission, to act against the enemy. When he had fufficient force for this purpose, he found himfelf in a condition not only to act against the enemy, but to give law to the governor, and to force him to give a fanction by his authority to those proceedings which were meant to destroy it.

Bacon, armed with the commission of a general and followed by the whole force of the colony, prepared to march against the Indians; when Sir William Berkley, the governor, freed from the immediate terror of his forces, recalled him, proclaimed him a traitor; and issued a reward for apprehending him as such. This brought matters to extremities; the people were universally inflamed; Bacon adhered to what he had done, the people adhered to Bacon; and the governor, who seemed no ways inclined to temporize or yield to the storm, sled over the river Potowmack, and proclaimed all Bacon's adherents traitors. He

put

put himself at the head of a small body of troops which he had raised in Maryland, and of fuch of the Virginians as were faithful to him, and wrote to England for supplies. On the other hand, Bacon marched to the capital, called an affembly, and for fix months together disposed all things according to his own pleasure. Every thing was now hastening to a civil war, when all was quieted, in as sudden a manner as it had begun, by the natural death of Bacon, in the very height of the confusion. The people, unable to act without a head, propoied terms of accommodation; the terms were listened to, and peace was restored and kept without any disturbance, not so much by the removal of the grievances complained of, as by the arrival of a regiment from England, which remained a long time in the country. It must be remarked, in honour of the moderation of the government, that no person suffered, in his life or his estate, for this rebellion, which was the more extraordinary as many people, at that time, were very earnest in solliciting grants of land in Virginia.

١,

ıd

1-

ne

nd.

0-

int

he

ns;

or,

es,

and

ch.

the

ad-

he-

ned

the

and

He put The events in all countries which are not the residence of the supreme power, and have no concern in the great business of transacting war and peace, have generally but little to engage the attention of the reader. I have therefore intirely omitted the tedious detail of the governors and their several transactions,

Vol. Q with

with which my materials fo plentifully supply me; and, for the same reason, I shall be very concise in my account of Maryland, which, agreeing altogether with Virginia in its climate, soil, products, trade, and genius of the inhabitants, and having sew or no remarkable events to recommend it, will save much trouble in that article.

CHAP. XVIII.

Maryland. The time of settling it. Grant to lord Baltimore. Attempts of king James to deprive him of his jurisdiction. He is deprived of it on the revolution. He is restored. Capital of Maryland. Its trade and inhabitants.

It was in the reign of Charles the first, that the lord Baltimore applied for a patent for a part of Virginia, and obtained, in 1632, a grant of a tract of land upon Chesapeak bay, of about an hundred and forty miles long, and an hundred and thirty broad, having Pennsylvania, then in the hands of the Dutch, upon the North, the Atlantic ocean upon the East, and the river Potowmack upon the South; in honour of the queen, he called this province Maryland.

Lord Baltimore was a Roman catholic, and was induced to attempt this fettlement in America,

America, in hopes of enjoying liberty of conscience for himself, and for such of his friends to whom the feverity of the laws might loofen their ties to their country, and make them prefer an easy banishment with freedom, to the conveniencies of England, embittered as they were by the sharpness of the laws, and the popular odium which hung over them. The court at that time was certainly very little inclined to treat the Roman catholics in a harsh manner, neither had they in reality the least appearance of reason to do so; but the laws themselves were of a rigorous constitution; and, however the court might be inclined to relax them, they could not in policy do it, but with great reserve. The Puritan party perpetually accused the court, and indeed the episcopal church, of a desire of returning to popery; and this accufation was so popular, that it was not in the power of the court to shew the Papists that indulgence which they defired. The laws were still executed with very little mitigation; and they were in themselves of a much keener temper, than those which had driven the Puritans about the same time to seek a refuge in the same part of the world. These reasons made lord Baltimore defirous to have, and the court willing to give him, a place of retreat in America.

 Q_2

The

olic, nt in

to

rft,

, in

esa-

hiles

hav-

the

pon

alled

2,28 An Account of the European

The settlement of the colony cost the lord Baltimore a large sum. It was made, under his auspices, by his brother, and about two hundred persons, Roman catholics, and most of them of good families. This settlement, at the beginning, did not meet with the same difficulties, which embarrassed and retarded most of the others we had made. The people were generally of the better fort; a proper fubordination was observed amongst them; and the Indians gave and took so little offence, that they ceded one half of their principal town, and some time after the whole of it, to these strangers. The Indian women taught ours how to make bread of their corn; their men went out to hunt and fish with the English; they assisted them in the chace, and sold them the game they took themselves for a trifling confideration; so that the new settlers had a fort of town ready built, ground ready cleared for their subsistence, and no enemy to harrass them.

They lived thus, without much trouble or fear, until some ill-disposed persons in Virginia infinuated to the Indians, that the Baltimore colony had designs upon them; that they were Spaniards and not Englishmen; and such other stories as they judged proper to sow the seeds of suspicion and enmity in the minds of these people. Upon the first appearance,

appearance, that the malice of the Virginians had taken effect, the new planters were not wanting to themselves. They built a good fort with all expedition, and took every other necessary measure for their defence; but they continued still to treat the Indians with so much kindness, that, partly by that and partly by the awe of their arms, the ill defigns of their

enemies were defeated.

ft.

le

er

1;

e,

al

it,

ht eir

ng-

old

ra

ers

adv

y to

e or

rgi-

alti-

that

en;

pper

y in

first,

nce,

As the colony met with so few obstructions, and as the Roman catholics in England were yet more feverely treated in proportion as the court party declined, numbers constantly arrived to replenish the settlement; which the lord proprietor omitted no care, and withheld no expence, to support and encourage; until the usurpation overturned the government at home, and deprived him of his rights abroad. Maryland remained under the governors appointed by the parliament and by Cromwell until the restoration, when lord Baltimore was re-instated in his former possessions, which he cultivated with his former wisdom, care, and moderation. No people could live in greater ease and security; and his lordship, willing that as many as possible should enjoy the benefits of his mild and equitable administration, gave his consent to an act of affembly, which he had before promoted in his province, for allowing a free and unlimited toleration for all who professed the Christian

religion, of whatever denomination. This liberty, which was never in the least instance violated, encouraged a great number, not only of the church of England, but of Presbyterians, Quakers, and all kinds of dissenters, to settle in Maryland, which before that was almost wholly in the hands of Roman catholics.

This lord, though guilty of no mal-administration in his government, though a zealous Roman catholic, and firmly attached to the cause of king James the second, could not prevent his charter from being questioned in that arbitrary reign, and a fuit from being commenced, to deprive him of the property and jurisdiction of a province granted by the royal favour, and peopled at such a vast expence of his own. But it was the error of that weak and unfortunate reign, neither to know its friends, nor its enemies; but, by a blind precipitate conduct, to hurry on every thing of whatever consequence with almost equal heat, and to imagine that the found of the royal authority was sufficient to justify every fort of conduct to every fort of people. But these injuries could not shake the honour and constancy of lord Baltimore, nor tempt him to defert the cause of his master. Upon the revolution, he had no reason to expect any favour; yet he met with more than king James had intended him; he was deprived indeed of all his jurisdiction, but he was left the the profits of his province, which were by no means inconfiderable; and when his descendents had conformed to the church of England, they were restored to all their rights as fully as the legislature has thought fit that any

proprietor should enjoy them.

cc

ly

e-

to

al-

cs.

ni-

ous

the

not

l in

eing

erty

the

ex-

or of

er to

t, by

very

most

hd of

ustify

ople.

nour

empt

Upon

t any

king

brived

as left

the

When, upon the revolution, power changed hands in that province, the new men made but an indifferent requital for the liberties and indulgences they had enjoyed under the old administration. They not only deprived the Roman catholics of all share in the government, but of all the rights of freemen; they have even adopted the whole body of the penal laws of England against them; they are at this day meditating new laws in the same fpirit, and they would undoubtedly go to the greatest lengths in this respect, if the moderation and good fense of the government in England did not fet some bounds to their bigotry; thinking very prudently that it were highly unjust, and equally impolitic, to allow an afylum abroad to any religious persuasions which they judged it improper to tolerate at home, and then to deprive them of its protection; recollecting at the same time, in the various changes which our religion and government have undergone, which have in their turns rendered every fort of party and religion obnoxious to the reigning powers, that this American asylum,

which has been admitted in the hottest times of persecution at home, has proved of infinite service, not only to the present peace of England, but to the prosperity of its commerce and the establishment of its power. There are a sort of men, who will not see so plain a truth; and they are the persons who would appear to contend most warmly for liberty; but it is only a party liberty for which they contend; a liberty, which they would stretch out one way only to narrow it in another; they are not assamed of using the very same pretences for persecuting others, that their enemies use for persecuting them.

This colony, as for a long time it had with Pennsylvania the honour of being unstained with any religious persecution, so neither they nor the Pennsylvanians have ever until very lately been harrassed by the calamity of any war, offensive or defensive, with their Indian neighbours, with whom they always lived in the most exemplary Indeed, in a war which the harmony. Indians made upon the colony of Virginia, by mistake they made an incursion into the bounds of Maryland; but they were toon sensible of their mistake, and attoned This present war indeed has changed every thing, and the Indians have been taught to laugh at all their ancient alliances.

Maryland,

Maryland, like Virginia, has no confiderable town, and for the fame reason; the number of navigable creeks and rivers. Annapolis is the seat of government. It is a small but beautifully situated town, upon the river Severn.

nt

of

ts

ill

he

ost

ty

ty,

λly

led

se-

er-

nad

un-

fo

ave

the ive,

iom lary

the

rgiinto

were

pned

ang-

been

and,

Here is the seat of the governor, and the principal custom-house collection. The people of Maryland have the same established religion with those of Virginia, that of the church of England; but here the clergy are provided for in a much more liberal manner, and they are the most decent, and the best of the clergy in North America. They export from Maryland the same things in all respects that they do from Virginia. Their tobacco is about forty thousand hogsheads. The White inhabitants are about forty thousand; the Negroes upwards of sixty thousand.

CHAP. XIX.

Attempts of the French to settle Carolina. They are beat off by the Spaniards.

I T must not be forgot, that we formerly called all the coast of North America by the name of Virginia. The province properly so called, with Maryland and the Carolinas, was known by the name of South Virginia.

Ву

233

By the Spaniards it was considered as part of Florida, which country they made to extend from New Mexico to the Atlantic ocean. By them it was first discovered; but they treated the natives with an inhumanity, which filled them with so violent an hatred to the Spanish name, as rendered their settlement there very disticult; nor did they push it vigorously, as the country shewed no marks of producing gold or silver, the only things for which the Spaniards then valued any country. Florida therefore remained under an entire neglect in Europe, until the reign of Charles the Nintli, hims of France.

king of France.

The celebrated leader of the Protestants in that kingdom, the admiral Chastillon, who was not only a great commander, but an able statesman, was a man of too comprehensive views not to see the advantages of a settlement in America; he procured two vessels to be fitted out for discoveries upon that coast. He had it probably in his thoughts to retire thither with those of his persuasion, if the fuccess, which hitherto suited so ill with his great courage and conduct, should at last entirely destroy his cause in France. These ships in two months arrived upon the coast of America; near the river now called Albemarle, in the province of North Carolina. The French gave the Indians to understand, in the best manner they were able, that they were were enemies to the Spaniards, which secured them a friendly reception and the good offices of the inhabitants. They were, however, in

no condition to make any fettlement.

d

b

sh

ry

as

ng

he

da

in

th,

in

/ho

ble

five

tle-

lels

ast.

tire

the

his

en-

hefe

toast

lbe-

lina.

and.

they

were

On their return to France, the admiral, at this time by the abominable policy of the court apparently in great favour, was fo well fatisfied with the account they had given of the country, that, in 1564, he litted out five or fix ships, with as many hundred men aboard, to begin a colony there. This was accordingly done at the place of their landing in the first expedition. They built a fort here, which they called Fort Charles, as they called the whole country Carolina, in honour of their king then reigning. The Spaniards, who had intelligence of their proceedings, dispatched a considerable force to attack this colony, who, not fatisfied with reducing it, put all the people to the fword, after quarter given; and, committing great outrages upon the natives, they paved the way for the vengeance which foon after fell upon them for fuch an unnecessary and unprovoked act of cruelty. For, though the admiral and his party were by this time destroyed in the infamous massacre of St. Bartholomew, and though the defign of a colony died with him, one M. de Gorgues, a private gentleman, fitted out some ships, which failed to that coast purely to revenge the murder of his countrymen and his friends.

The

236 An Account of the European

The Indians greedily embraced the opportunity of becoming affociates in the punishment of the common enemy. They joined in the fiege of two or three forts the Spaniards had built there; they took them, and, in all of them, put the garrison to the sword without

mercy.

Satisfied with this action, the adventurers returned, and, happily for us, the French court did not understand, blinded as they were by their bigotry, the advantages which might have been derived from giving America to the Protestants, as we afterwards did to the Dissenters, as a place of refuge; if they had taken this step, most certainly we should have either had no settlements in America at all, or they must have been small in extent, and precarious in their tenure, to what they are at this day.

CHAP. XX.

Carolina is settled by the English. Its constitution. The lords proprietors resign their charter. Made royal government, and divided into two provinces.

A FTER the French expedition, the country of Carolina remained without any attention from Spaniards, French, or English, until, as we observed in the article of Virginia, Sir Walter Raleigh projected an establish-

establishment there. It was not in the part now called Virginia, but in North Carolina, that our first unhappy settlements were made and destroyed. Afterwards the adventurers entered the bay of Chesapeak, and fixed a permanent colony to the Northward; so that, although Carolina was the first part of the Atlantic coast of America, which had an European colony, yet, by an odd caprice, it was for a long time deserted by both England and France, who settled with infinitely more difficulty in climates much less advantageous or agreeable.

0

he

ut

an

It was not until the year 1663, in the reign of Charles the Second, that we had any notion of formally fettling that country. In that year, the earl of Clarendon lord chancellor, the duke of Albemarle, the lord Craven, lord Berkley, lord Ashley, afterwards earl of Shaftesbury, Sir George Carteret, Sir William Berkley, and Sir George Colleton, obtained a charter for the property and jurisdiction of that country, from the 31st degree of North latitude to the 36th; and, being invested with full power to settle and govern the country, they had the model of a constitution framed, and a body of fundamental laws compiled, by the famous philosopher Mr. Locke. On this plan, the lords proprietors themselves stood in the place of the king, gave their affent or diffent, as they thought proper, to all laws, appointed

pointed all officers, and bestowed all titles of dignity. In his turn, one of these lords acted for the rest. In the province they appointed two other branches, in a good measure analogous to the legislature in England. made three ranks, or rather classes of nobility. The lowest was composed of those to whom they had made grants of twelve thousand acres of land, whom they called barons; the next order had twenty-four thousand acres, or two baronies, with the title of cassiques; these were to answer our earls; the third had two cassiqueships, or forty-eight thousand acres, and were called landgraves, a title in that province analogous to duke. This body formed the upper house; their lands were not alienable by parcels. The lower house was formed, as it is in the other colonies, of reprefentatives from the several towns or counties. But the whole was not called, as in the rest of the plantations, an affembly, but a parliament.

They began their first settlement at a point of land towards the Southward of their district, between two navigable rivers, though of no long course, called Ashley and Cowper rivers; and there laid the soundation of a city, called Charles-town, which was designed to be, what it now is, the capital of the province. They expended about twelve thousand pounds in the first settlement. But it was not chiefly

to

a

n

e

as

W

E

fe:

pr da hi

pr

gr di

lo

ga

to the funds of the lords proprietors, that this province owed its establishment. They observed what advantages the other colonies derived from opening an harbour for refugees; and, not only from this confideration, but from the humane disposition of that excellent man who formed the model of their government, they gave an unlimited toleration to people of all religious persuasions. This induced a great number of dissenters, over whom the then government held a more fevere hand than was confistent with justice or policy, to transport themselves with their fortunes and familines into Carolina. They became foon at least as numerous as the churchmen; and, though they displayed none of that frantic bigotry which diffraced the New England refugees, they could not preserve themselves from the jealousy and hatred of those of the church of England, who, having a majority in one of the affemblies, attempted to exclude all diffenters from a right of fitting there. This produced diffensions, tumults, and riots every day, which tore the colony to pieces, and hindered it for many years from making that progress which might be expected from its great natural advantages. The people fell into disputes of no less violent a nature with the lords proprietors; and, provoking the Indians by a series of unjust and violent actions, they gave occasion to two wars, in which however

0

d

e. ds

łу

to

ever they were victorious, and subdued almost all the Indian nations within their own bounds on this side of the Apalachian mountains.

Their intestine distractions and their foreign wars kept the colony so low, that an act of parliament, if possible to prevent the last ruinous consequences of these divisions, put the province under the immediate care and inspection of the crown. The lords proprietors, making a virtue of necessity, accepted a recompence of about twenty-four thousand pounds, both for the property and jurisdiction; except the earl Granville, who kept his eighth part of the property, which comprehends very near half of North Carolina, on that part which immediately borders upon the province of Virginia. Their constitution, in those points wherein it differed from that of the other colonies, was altered; and the country, for the more commodious administration of affairs, was divided into two distinct independent governments, called North Carolina and South Carolina. This was in the year 1728. In a little time, a firm peace was established with all the neighbouring Indian nations, the Cherokees, the Creeks, and the Cataubas; the province began to breathe from its internal quarrels, and its trade has advanced every year fince that time with an aftonishing rapidity. CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

Situation, climate, &c. of Carolina. Its animal and vegetable productions.

HESE two provinces, lying between the 31st and 36th degrees of latitude, are upwards of four hundred miles in length, and in breadth to the Indian nations near three hundred. The climate and soil in these countries do not confiderably differ from those of Virginia; but, where they differ, it is much to the advantage of Carolina, which, on the whole, may be confidered one of the finest climates in the world. The heat in fummer is very little greater than in Virginia; but the winters are milder and shorter, and the year, in all respects, does not come to the same violent extremities. However, the weather, though in general ferene as the air is healthy, yet, like all American weather, makes such quick changes, and those so sharp, as to oblige the inhabitants to rather more caution in their dress and diet, than we are obliged to use in Europe. Thunder and lightning is frequent; and it is the only one of our colonies upon the continent which is subject to hurricanes; but they are very rare, and not near so violent as those of the West-Indies. Part of the month of March, and all April, May, and the greatest Vol. II. part

h

ry

rt

0-

se

he

ry,

n-

nd

28.

red

the

as;

ery

pi-

242 An Account of the European

part of June, are here inexpressibly temperate and agreeable, but in July, August, and for almost the whole of September, the heat is very intense; and, though the winters are tharp, especially when the North-West wind prevails, yet they are foldom fevere enough to freeze any confiderable water, affecting only, the mornings and evenings; the frosts have never sufficient strength to resist the noon-day fun, so that many tender plants, which do not stand the winter of Virginia, flourish in Carolina; for they have oranges in great plenty near Charles-town, and excellent in their kinds, both fweet and four. Olives are rather neglected by the planter, than denied by the The vegetation of every kind of plant is here almost incredibly quick; for there is fomething fo kindly in the air and foil, that, where the latter has the most barren and unpromiting appearance, if neglected for a while, of itself it shoots out an immense quantity of those various plants and beautiful flowering shrubs and flowers, for which this country is so famous, and of which Mr. Catesby, in his Natural History of Carolina, has made fuch fine drawings.

The whole country is in a manner one forest, where our planters have not cleared it. The trees are almost the same in every respect with those produced in Virginia; and, by the different species of these, the quality of the soil

e,

ot

)-

ty

eir

er

he of

for

nd

en for

nse

ful

his

Ca-

has

bne

it.

ect the

the

foil

foil is eafily known; for those grounds which bear the oak, the walnut, and the hickory, are extremely fertile; they are of a dark fand, intermixed with loam, and, as all their land abounds with nitre, it is a long time before it is exhausted; for here they never use any manure. The pine barren is the worst of all; this is an almost perfectly white sand, yet it bears the pine tree and some other useful plants naturally, yielding good profit in pitch, tar, and turpentine. When this species of land is cleared, for two or three years together it produces very tolerable crops of Indian corn and peafe; and, when it lies low and is flooded, it even answers well for rice. But, what is the best of all for this province, this worst species of its land is favourable to a species of the most valuable of all its products to one of the kinds of indigo. There is another fort of ground, which lies low and wet upon the banks of some of their rivers; this is called swamp, which in some places is in a manner useless, in others it is far the richest of all their grounds; it is a black fat earth, and bears their great staple rice, which must have in general a rich moist soil, in the greatest plenty and perfection. The country near the fea and at the mouths of the navigable rivers is much the worft; for the most of the land there is of the species of the pale, light, sandycoloured ground; and what is otherwise in R 2

244 An Account of the European

those parts is little better than an unhealthy and unprofitable falt marsh; but the country, as you advance in it, improves continually; and at an hundred miles distance from Charlestown, where it begins to grow hilly, the foil is of a prodigious fertility, fitted for every purpose of human life. The air is pure and wholfome, and the fummer heats much more temperate than in the flat country; for Carodina is all an even plain for eighty miles from the fea; no hill, no rock, scarce even a pebble to be met with: fo that the best part of the maritime country, from this fameness, must want something of the fine effect which its beautiful products would have by a more variegated and advantageous disposition; but nothing can be imagined more pleasant to the eye than the back country, and its fruitfulness is almost incredible. Wheat grows extremely well there, and yields a prodigious increase. In the other parts of Carolina they raise but little, where it is apt to mildew and spend itself in straw; and these evils the planters take very little care to redress, as they turn their whole attention to the culture of rice, which is more profitable, and in which they are unrivalled; being supplied with what wheat they want in exchange for this grain from New York and Pennsylvania.

The land in Carolina is very eafily cleared every where, as there is little or no under-wood.

Their forests consist mostly of great trees at a confiderable distance afunder; so that they can clear in Carolina more land in a week, than in the forests of Europe they can do in a month. Their method is to cut them at about a foot from the ground, and then saw the trees into boards, or convert them into staves, heading, or other species of lumber, according to the nature of the wood or the demands at the market. If they are too far from navigation, they heap them together, and leave them to rot. The roots foon decay; and, before that, they find no inconvenience from them, where land is so plenty.

The aboriginal animals of this country are in general the fame with those of Virginia, but there is yet a greater number and variety of beautiful towls. All the animals of Europe are here in plenty; black cattle are multiplied prodigiously. About fifty years ago, it was a thing extraordinary to have above three or four cows, now some have a thousand; fome in North Carolina a great many more; but to have two or three hundred is very com-These ramble all day at pleasure in the forests; but, their calves being separated and kept in fenced pastures, the cows return every evening to them; they are then milked, detained all night, milked in the morning, and then let loofe again. The hogs range in the same manner, and return like the cows, by

 R_3

having

nderrood.

il

ry nd

re

0-

111

eb-

of

ess.

ich

ore

but

the.

ful-

ex-

ious

they

dew

the

they

re of

hich

what

grain

having shelter and some victuals provided for them at the plantation; these are vastly numercars, and many quite wild; many horned catthe and horses too run wild in their woods: though at their first settlement there was not one of these animals in the country. They drive a great many cattle from North Carolina every year into Virginia, to be flaughtered there; and they kill and falt some beef, and a good deal of pork, for the West-Indies, within themseves; but the beef is neither so good, nor does it keep near fo long, as what is ient to the same market from Ireland. export a confiderable number of live cattle to Pennsylvania and the West-Indies. are not so plenty as the black cattle or hogs, neither is their flesh so good; their wool is very ordinary.

CHAP. XXII.

The commodities of Carolina for export. Rice, indigo, pitch, and tar. Process in raising and manufacturing these commodities.

HE trade of Carolina, besides the lumber, provision, and the like, which it yields in common with the rest of America, has three great staple commodities, indigo, rice, and the produce of the pine, turpentine, tar, and pitch. The two former commodities

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. modities South Carolina has intirely to itself; and, taking in North Carolina, this part of America yields more pitch and tar than all the

rest of our colonies.

Rice anciently formed by itself the staple of this province; this wholfome grain makes a great part of the food of all ran's of people in the Southern parts of the world; in the Northern, it is not so much in request. Whilst the rigour of the act of navigation obliged them to fend all their rice directly to England, to be re-shipped for the market of Spain and Portugal, the charges incident to this regulation lay so heavy upon the trade, that the cultivation of rice, especially in time of war, when these charges were greatly aggravated by the rife of the freight and infurance, hardly anfwered the charges of the planter; but now the legislature has relaxed the law in this respect, and permits the Carolinians to send their rice directly to any place to the Southward of Cape Finisterre. This prudent indulgence has again revived the rice trade; and, though they have gone largely, and with great spirit, into the profitable article of indigo, it has not diverted their attention from the cultivation of rice; they raise now above double the quantity of what they raifed fome years ago; and this branch alone of their commerce is, at the lowest estimation, worth one hundred and fifty thousand pounds sterling annually.

umhich rica, ligo, comlities

-C

h-

ef,

es,

so

t is

ley

to

eep

gs,

ol is

Rice,

and

Indigo is a dye made from a plant of the fame name, which probably was so called from India, where it was first cultivated, and from whence we had, for a considerable time, the whole of what we confumed in Europe. This plant is very like the fern when grown, and, when young, hardly diffinguishable from lucern-grass; its leaves in general are pennated and terminated by a fingle lobe; the flowers confift of five leaves, and are of the papilionaceous kind; the uppermost petal being larger and rounder than the rest, and lightly furrowed on the fide; the lower ones are short, and end in a point; in the middle of the flower is fituated the stile, which afterwards becomes a pod, containing the feeds.

They cultivate three forts of indigo in Carolina, which demand the same variety of soils. First, the French or Hispaniola indigo, which striking a long tap-root, will only slourish in a deep rich soil; and therefore, though an excellent fort, is not so much cultivated in the maritime parts of Carolina, which are generally sandy; but no part of the world is more fit to produce it in perfection than the same country, an hundred miles backwards; it is neglected too on another account, for it hardly bears a winter so sharp as that of Ca-

rolina.

The fecond fort, which is the false Guatemala or true Bahama, bears the winter better, is a more tall and vigorous plant, is raised in greater quantities from the same compass of ground; is content with the worst soils in the country, and is therefore more cultivated than the first fort, though inferior in the quality of

its dve.

d

d

e. n,

m

n-

he he

e-

nd

es dle

er-

Ca-

ils.

ich

in

ex-

in

are d is

the

ds; r it

Ca-

ate-

ter, is

The third fort is the wild indigo, which is indigenous here; this, as it is a native of the country, answers the purposes of the planter the best of all, with regard to the hardiness of the plant, the easiness of the culture, and the quantity of the produce; of the quality there is some dispute, not yet settled amongst the planters themselves; nor can they as yet distinctly tell when they are to attribute the faults of their indigo to the nature of the plant, to the seasons, which have much influence upon it, or to some defect in the manufacture.

The time of planting the indigo is generally after the first rains succeeding the vernal equinox; the feed is fowed in small straight trenches, about eighteen or twenty inches afunder; when it is at its height, it is generally eighteen inches tall. It is fit for cutting, if all things answer well, in the beginning of July. Towards the end of August, a second cutting is obtained; and, if they have a mild autumn, there is a third cutting at Michaelmas; the indigo land must be weeded every day, and the plants cleanfed from worms, and

the

the plantation attended with the greatest care and diligence; about twenty-five negroes may manage a plantation of fifty acres, and compleat the manufacture of the drug, besides providing their own necessary subsistance, and that of the planter's family. Each acre yields, if the land be very good, sixty or seventy pounds weight of indigo; at a medium the produce is sifty pounds. When the plant is beginning to blossom it is sit for cutting; and, when cut, great care ought to be taken to bring it to the steeper, without pressing or shaking it, as a great part of the beauty of the indigo depends upon the sine farina which adheres to the leaves of this plant.

The apparatus for making indigo is pretty confiderable, though not very expensive; for, belides a pump, the whole confifts only of vats and tubs of cypress wood, common and cheap in this country. The indigo, when cut, is first laid in a vat about twelve or fourteen foot long, and four deep, to the height of about fourteen inches, to macerate and digest. Then this vessel, which is called the steeper, is filled with water; the whole having lain from about twelve or fixteen hours, according to the weather, begins to ferment, swell, rife, and grow sensibly warm; at this time spars of wood are run across to prevent its rising too much, and a pin is then fet to mark the highest point of its ascent; when it falls below this mark, they judge that the fermentation has attained its due pitch, and begins to abate; this directs the manager to open a cock, and let off the water into another vat, which is called the beater; the gross matter that remains in the first vat is carried off to manure the ground, for which purpose it is excellent, and new cuttings are put in as long

as the harvest of this weed continues.

y

1es

bi

ty

ne

is

d,

to

or

ne

ch

ty

r,

of

nd

ıt,

en

of

ft.

is

177

to

le,

of

00

he

e-

W

When the water, strongly impregnated with the particles of the indigo, has run into the fecond vat or beater, they attend with a fort of bottomless buckets, with long handles, to work and agitate it; which they do incessantly until it heats, froths, ferments, and rifes above the rim of the vessel which contains it; to allay this violent fermentation, oil is thrown in as the froth rifes, which instantly finks it. When this beating has continued for twenty, thirty, or thirty-five minutes, according to the state of the weather (for in cool weather it requires the longest continued beating) a sinall muddy grain begins to be formed, the falts and other particles of the plant united and dissolved before with the water, are now re-united, and begin to granulate.

To discover these particles the better, and to find when the liquor is sufficiently beaten, they take up some of it from time to time on a plate or in a glass; when it appears in an hopeful condition, they let loofe fome lime

water

water from an adjacent vessel, gently stirring the whole, which wonderfully facilitates the operation; the indigo granulates more fully, the liquor assumes a purplish colour, and the whole is troubled and muddy; it is now fuffered to fettle; then the clearer part is left to run off into another succession of vessels, from whence the water is conveyed away as fast as it clears at the top, until nothing remains but a thick mud, which is put into bags of coarse linen. These are hung up and left for some time, until the moisture is entirely drained off, To finish the drying, this mud is turned out of the bags, and worked upon boards of some porous timber with a wooden spatula; it is frequently exposed to the morning and evening fun, but for a short time only; and then it is put into boxes or frames, which is called the curing, exposed again to the fun in the fame cautious manner, until with great labour and attention the operation is finished, and that valuable drug, called indigo, fitted for the The greatest skill and care is remarket. quired in every part of the process, or there may be great danger of ruining the whole; the water must not be suffered to remain too short or too long a time, either in the steeper or beater; the beating itself must be nicely managed so as not to exceed or fall short; and, in the curing, the exact medium between too much or too little drying is not easily attained.

tained. Nothing but experience can make

the overfeer skilful in these matters.

There are two methods of trying the goodness of indigo; by fire and by water; if it fwims it is good, if it finks it is naught, the heavier the worse; so if it wholly dissolves in water it is good. Another way of proving is, by the fire ordeal; if it entirely burns away, it is good; the adulterations remain untouched.

There is perhaps no branch of manufacture, in which so large profits may be made upon fo moderate a fund, as that of indigo; and there is no country in which this manufacture can be carried on to fuch advantage as in Carolina, where the climate is healthy, provision plentiful and cheap, and every thing necessary for that business had with the greatest ease. To do justice to the Carolinians, they have not neglected these advantages; and, if they continue to improve them with the same fpirit in which they have begun and attend diligently to the quality of their goods, they must naturally and necessarily come to supply the whole confumption of the world with this commodity; and consequently make their country the richest, as it is the pleasantest and most fertile, part of the British dominions.

In all parts of Carolina, but especially in North Carolina, they make great quantities of turpentine, tar and pitch. They are all the produce

e - e ; o r y; n

produce of the pine. The turpentine is drawn fimply from incisions made in the tree; they are made from as great an height as a man can reach with an hatchet; these incisions meet at the bottom of the tree in a point, where they pour their contents into a veff... placed to receive them. There is nothing further in this process. But tar requires a more considerable apparatus and great trouble. They prepare a circular floor of clay, declining a little towards the center; from this is laid a pipe of wood, the upper part of which is even with the floor, and reaches ten feet without the circumference; under the end the earth is dug away, and barrels placed to receive the tar as it runs. Upon the floor is built up a large pile of pine wood split in pieces, and furrounded with a wall of earth, leaving only a small aperture at the top where the fire is first kindled. When the fire begins to burn, they cover this opening likewise to confine the fire from flaming out, and to leave only sufficient heat to force the tar downwards to the floor. They temper the heat as they please, by running a stick into the wall of clay, and giving it air. Pitch is made by boiling tar in large iron kettles fet in furnaces, or burning it in round clay holes made in the The greatest quantity of pitch and tar is made in North Carolina.

CHAP. XXIII.

North Carolina, some account of its settlement. Bad state of that province. Is considerably improved. Chief town.

which compose Carolina, ten navigable rivers of a very long course, and innumerable smaller ones, which fall into them, all abounding in sish. About sisty or sixty miles from the sea, there are falls in most of the great rivers, which, as you approach their sources, become more frequent. This is the case of almost all the American rivers; at these falls, those who navigate these rivers land their goods, carry them beyond the cataract on horses or waggons, and then re-ship them below or above it.

is.

h

et

} ---

18

in

h,

re

ns

to

ve

n-

as

all

bу

es,

he

tar

P.

The mouths of the rivers in North Carolina form but ordinary harbours, and do not admit, except one at Cape Fear, veffels of above feventy or eighty tons; fo that larger ships are obliged to lye off in a sound called Ocacock, which is formed between some islands and the continent. This lays a weight upon their trade by the expence of lighterage. North Carolina, partly upon that occasion, but principally that the first settlements were made as near as possible to the capital, which lies considerably

256 An ACCOUNT of the European

confiderably to the Southward, was greatly neglected. For a long time it was but ill inhabited, and by an indigent and diforderly people, who had little property, and hardly any law or government to protect them in what they had. As commodious land grew scarce in the other colonies, people in low circumstances, observing that a great deal of excellent and convenient land was yet to be patented in North Carolina, were induced by that circumstance to plant themselves there. Others, who faw how they prospered, followed their example. The government became more attentive to the place it became more valuable; by degrees Smothing of a better order was introduced. The effect of which is, that, though by no means as wealthy as South Carolina North Carolina has many more white people; things begin to wear a face of fettlement; and the difficulties they have lain under are not fo many nor so great, as to make us neglect all future efforts, or hinder us from forming very reasonable expectations of feeing the trade of this country, with proper management, become a flourishing and fruitful branch of the British American commerce. That even now it is far from contemptible, may appear by a lift of their exported commodities, which I shall subjoin.

Edenton was formerly the capital of North Carolina, if a trifling village can deserve that denoitly

in-

erly

rdly

ı in

rew

low

l of

o be

uced

elves

ered,

ment came of a

ect of

althy

nany

ear a they

great,

is, or

e ex-

intry,

irish-

erican

from

ir ex-

North

e that

deno-

n.

denomination; but the present governor Mr. Dobbs has projected one further South upon the river Neus; which, though it has the advantage of being something more central, is by no means equally well situated for trade, which ought always to be of the first consideration in whatever regards any of the colonies. However, none of their towns are worth mentioning; the conveniency of inland navigation in all our Southern colonies, and the want of handicrastimen, is a great and almost insuperable obstacle to their ever having any considerable.

CHAP. XXIV.

An account of Charles-town. Port-Royal. The trade of Carolina. Its vast increase. Articles not sufficiently attended to there.

Inas which can draw our at ention is Charles-town; and this is one of the first in North America for size, beauty, and trassic. Its situation I have already mentioned, so admirably chosen at the confluence of two navigable rivers. Its harbour is good in every respect, but that of a bar, which hinders vessels of more than two hundred tons burden from entering. The town is regularly and pretty strongly fortised both by nature and art; the streets are Voi. II.

258 An Account of the European

well cut; the houses are large and well built, and rent extremely high. The church is spacious, and executed in a very handsome taste, exceeding every thing of that kind which we have in America. Here, besides, the several denominations of differents have their meeting houses. It contains about eight hundred houses, and is the seat of the governor and the place of meeting of the affembly. Several handsome equipages are kept here. planters and merchants are rich and well bred; the people are shewy and expensive in their drefs and way of living; fo that every thing conspires to make this by much the liveliest and politest place, as it is one of the richest too, in all America.

The best harbour in this province is far to the Southward, on the borders of Georgia, called Port-Royal. This might give a capacious and safe reception to the largest sleets of the greatest bulk and burden; yet the town, which is called Beaufort, built upon an island of the same name with the harbour, is not as yet considerable, but it bids fair in time for becoming the first trading town in this part of America.

The import trade of South Carolina from Great Britain and the West-Indies is the same in all respects with that of the rest of the colonies, and is very large. Their trade with the Indians is likewise in a very flourish-

ing

As for its export, both the ing condition. nature of that and its prodigious increase may be difcerned from the following comparative tables, which let us fee how much this colony has really advanced in a few years; as an attentive confideration of its natural advantages must shew us how much it must advance, if properly managed, as there is scarce any improvement of which this excellent country is not capable.

Exported from Charles-town,

In the year 1731. Rice 41,957 barrels Rice, Indigo, co,000 pounds Indigo, 216,924 pds. Pitch, 10,750 barrels Tar, 2,063 ditto Turpent. 759 ditto Beef, pork, &c. not Tar,

particularized.

lt,

a-

łe,

we

et-

red

the

ral

The ed;

neir

ing

liest

too,

r to

gia,

pa-

s of

wn,

and

not

for

rt of

rom

the

t of

rade

rish-

ing

ral

In the year 1754? 104,682 barrels Deerskins, 300 hhds. Deerskins, 460 hogsheads 114 bund. 508 loose Pitch, 5,869 barrels 2,945 ditto 759 ditto Turpent. 416 ditto Beef. Pork, 1,560 ditto Ind.corn, 16,428 bush. Peas, 9,162 ditto Taned lea.4, 196 barrels Hides in the hair 1,200 Shing. 1, 114,000 Staves, 206,000

Lumb. 395,000 feet

Befides

Besides a great deal of live cattle, horses, cedar, cypress, and walnut plank; bees-wax,

myrtle, and some raw filk and cotton.

North Carolina, which is reputed one of the least flourishing of our settlements, and which certainly lay under great difficulties, yet is within a few years greatly improved. The consequence of this inferior province may appear by the following view of its trade, which I can take upon me to say is not very far from being exact; it is at least sufficiently so to exable us to form a proper idea of this province, and its commerce.

Exported from all the ports of North Carolina

in 1753.

Tar, 61,528 barrels.

Pitch, 12,055 ditto.

Turpentine, 10,429 ditto.

Staves, 762,330 no.

Shingles, 2,500,000 no.

Lumber, 2,000,647 feet.

Corn, 61,580 bushels.

Peas, about 10,000 ditto.

Pork & Beef, 3,300 barrels.

Tobacco, about 100 hogsheads.
Tanned lea. about 1000 hundred weight.

Deer skins, in all ways, about 30,000. Besides a very considerable quantity of wheat, rice, bread, potatoes, bees-wax, tallow, candles, bacon, hog's lard, some cotton, and a

vaft

11

v fl

B

n

fu

of

pi

in

ta

pi

in

fii

fo fu X,

ina

eat, anld a vast deal of squared timber of walnut and cedar, and hoops and headings of all forts. Of late they raise indigo, but in what quantity I cannot determine, for it is all exported from South Carolina. They raise likewise much more tobacco than I have mentioned, but this, as it is produced on the fontiers of Virginia, fo it is exported from thence. They export too no inconsiderable quantity of beaver, racoon, otter, fox, minx, and wild cats, skins, and in every ship a good deal of live cattle, besides what they vend in Virginia. Both in North and South Carolina they have made frequent, but I think not vigorous nor fufficiently continued, efforts in the cultivation of cotton and filk. What they have fent home of these commodities is of so excellent a kind, as to give us great encouragement to proceed in a business which we have not taken to heart with all that warmth which its importance in trade and the fitness of the climate for these most valuable articles certainly deferve. It was a long time before this province went into the profitable trade of indigo, notwithstanding a premium subfisted a good many years for all that should be raised in our plantations; the thing was at first despaired of, and it was never judged that Carolina could produce this drug; but no fooner had a few shewn a spirited and successful example, than all went into it to heartily, that though it is but about fix years fince they began, I am informed that five hundred thoufand weight was made last year; and as they go on, in a very little time they will supply the market with a commodity, which before we purchased every ounce from the French and Spaniards. Silk requires still more trouble, and a closer attention; as yet it proceeds with languor, nor will a premium alone ever suffice to let on foot in a vigorous manner a manufacture which will find great difficulties in any country, which does not abound in hands that can work for very trifling wages. want of this advantage in Carolina, though no part of the world is fitter for this business and no bufiness could be so advantageous to England, will, for a very long time, be an impediment to the manufacture of raw filk, unless fome proper, well-studied, and vigorously-executed scheme be set on foot for that purpose; and furely it is a matter worthy of a very ferious confideration. America is our great resource; this will remain to us when other branches of our trade are decayed, or exist no more; and therefore we ought to grudge no expence that may enable them to answer this end fo effectually, as one day to supply the many losses we have already had, and the many more we have but too much reason to apprehend, in our commerce. These expences are not like the expences of war, heavy in their

cy

u-

ey

oly

ore

ch

le, ith

ice

in

nds

he no

and

16-

di-

leſs

xe-

ſe;

ery

reat

her

: no

no

this

the

the

ı to

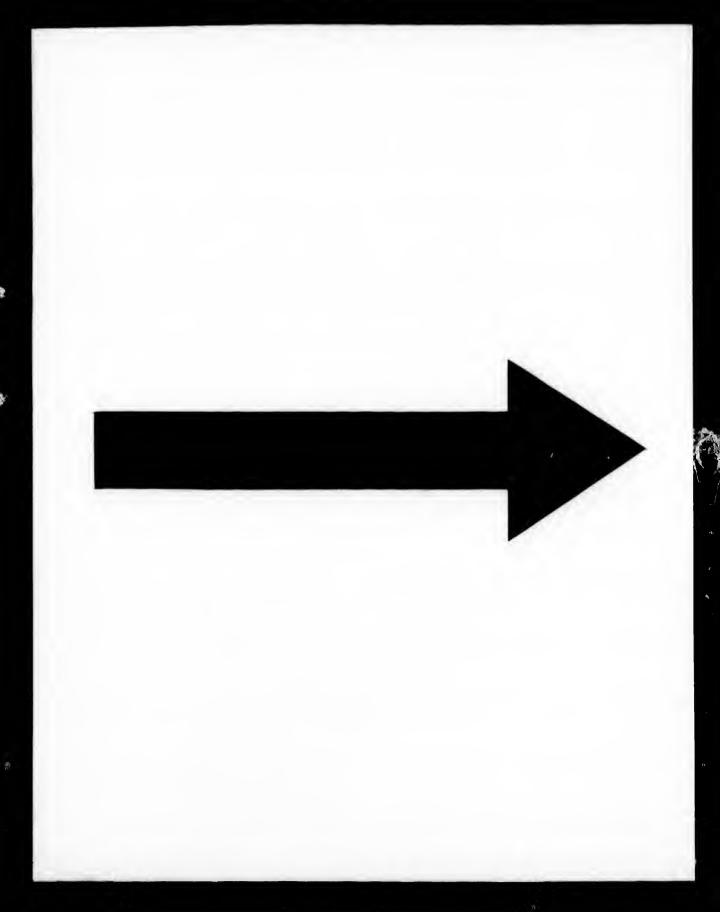
ices

y in heir

CHAP. XXV.

Settlement of Georgia. Reasons for it. The plan of the settlement defective. Attempts to remedy it.

I N the year 1732, the government, observing that a great tract of land in Carolina, upon the borders of the Spanish Florida, lay waste and unfettled, refolved to erect it into a separate province, and to fend a colony thither. This they were the rather induced to do, because it lay on the frontier of all our provinces, naked and defenceless; whereas, if it could be properly fettled, it would be a strong barrier to them upon that fide, or at least would be sufficient to protect Carolina from the incursions which the Indians, instigated by the French or Spaniards, might make upon that province. They had it likewise in their view to raife wine, oil, and filk, and to turn the industry of this new people from the timber



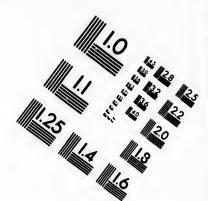
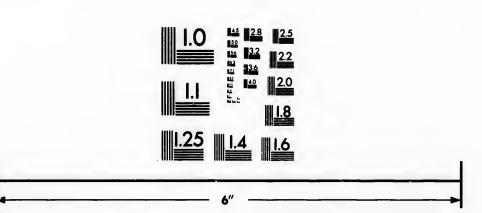


IMAGE EVALUATION TEST TARGET (MT-3)



STATE OF THE STATE

Photographic Sciences Corporation

23 WEST MAIN STREET WEBSTER, N.Y. 14580 (716) 872-4503

SIM SIM SELECTION OF THE SELECTION OF TH



264 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

timber and provision trade, which the other colonies had gone into too largely, into channels more advantageous to the public. Laudable designs in every respect; though perhaps the means which were taken to put them in execution were not altogether answerable.

That whole country which lies between the rivers Savannah and Alatamaha North and South, and from the Atlantic ocean on the East to the great South-Sea upon the West, was vested in trustees; at the end of that period, the property in chief was to revert to the crown. This country extends about sixty miles from North and South near the sea, but widens in the more remote parts to above one hundred and sifty. From the Sea to the Apalachian mountains, it is not much short of three hundred.

In pursuance of the original design, the trustees resolved to encourage poor people to settle in the province, which had been committed to their care; and to this purpose found them in necessaries to transport them into a country, of which they had previously published a most exaggerated and flattering description. In reality, the country differs little from South Carolina, but that the summers are yet hotter, and the soil in the general of a poorer kind. The colony was sent over under the care of Mr. Oglethorpe, who

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. very generously bestowed his own time and pains, without any reward, for the advancement of the settlement.

er

n-

ıd→

ps

ın

cn

rth

on

he

nat

to

kty

out

ove

the

he

to

m-

ofe

em ſlу

ng

ers

m-

ne-

enţ

ho гy

The trustees had very well observed, that many of our colonies, especially that of South Carolina, had been very much endangered, both internally and externally, by fuffering the Negroes to grow fo much more numerous than the Whites. An error of this kind, they judged, in a colony which was not only to defend itself but to be in some fort a protection to the others, would have been inexcusable; they, for that reason, forbid the importation of Negroes into Georgia. In the next place, they observed that great mischiefs happened in the other fettlements from making vast grants of land, which the grantees jobbed out again to the discouragement of the fettlers; or, what was worse, suffered to lie idle and uncultivated. To avoid this mischief. and to prevent the people from becoming wealthy and luxurious, which they thought inconfistent with the military plan upon which this colony was founded, they allowed in the common course of each family but twentyfive acres; and none could, according to the original scheme, by any means come to posless more than five hundred. Neither did they give an inheritance in fee simple, or to the heirs general of the settlers, but granted them their lands inheritable only by their male iffue.

266 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

issue. They likewise forbid the importation of rum into the province, to prevent the great disorders which they observed to arise in the other parts of North America from the abuse

of spirituous liquors.

These regulations, though well intended and meant to bring about very excellent purposes, yet it might at first, as it did afterwards, appear, that they were made without sufficiently consulting the nature of the country or the disposition of the people which they regarded. For, in the first place, as the climate is excessively hot, and field work very laborious in a new colony, as the ground must be cleared, tilled, and sowed, all with great and incessant toil for their bare subsistence, the load was too heavy for the White men, especially men who had not been seasoned to the country. The consequence of which was, that the greatest part of their time, all the heat of the day, was spent in idleness, which brought certain want along with it. It is true, that all our colonies on the continent, even Virginia and Carolina, were originally fettled without the help of Negroes. White men were obliged to the labour, and they underwent it, because they then saw no other way; but it is the nature of man not to submit to extraordinary hardships in one fpot, when they fee their neighbours on another, without any difference in the circum**stances** SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. 267 stances of things, in a much more easy condition. Besides, there were no methods taken to animate them under the hardships they endured. All things contributed to dispirit them.

at

b:

r-

i-

ry

ry

at

e,

n,

to

ch

all

ſs,

It

ıt,

lly

he

nd

no

ot

ne

n-

n-

ces

A levelling scheme in a new colony is a thing extremely unadviseable. Men are feldom induced to leave their country, but upon some extraordinary prospects; there ought always to be fomething of a vastness in the view that is presented to them, to strike powerfully upon their imagination; and this will operate, because men will never reafon well enough to fee, that the majority of mankind are not endued with dispositions proper to make a fortune any where, let the proposed advantages be what they will. The majority of mankind must always be indigent; but in a new fettlement they must be all so, unless some persons there are on such a comfortable and substantial footing as to give direction and vigour to the industry of the rest; for, in every well contrived building, there must be strong beams and joists, as well as fmaller bricks, tiles, and laths. Persons of substance found themselves discouraged from attempting a fettlement, by the narrow bounds which no industry could enable them to pass; and the design of confirming the inheritance to the male line was an additional discouragement. The settlers found themselves not upon a par with the other colonies. There was an obvious inconvenience in leaving no provision at all for females, as in a new colony the land must be, for some time at least, the only wealth of the family. quantity of twenty-five acres was undoubtedly too small a portion, as it was given without any confideration of the quality of the land, and was therefore in many places of very little value. Add to this, that it was clogged, after a short free tenure, with a much greater quit-rent than is paid in our best and longestfettled colonies. Indeed, through the whole manner of granting land, there appeared, I know not what low attention to the trifling profits that might be derived to the trustees or the crown by rents and escheats, which clogged the liberal scheme that was first laid down, and was in itself extremely injudicious. When you have a flourishing colony, with extensive settlements, from the smallest quit-rents the crown receives a large revenue; but, in an ill-settled province, the greatest rents make but a poor return, and yet are sufficient to burden and impoverish the people.

The tail male grants were so grievous, that the trustees themselves corrected that error in a short time. The prohibition of rum, though specious in appearance, had a very bad effect. The waters in this unsettled country, running through such an extent of forest, were not wholsome S.

V-

w

at

1e

ly

ut d,

ry d,

er

le

I

ng es

ch

id is.

x-

ts

an

ut

en

at

in

gh

it.

ng

ot

he

wholsome drinking, and wanted the corrective of a little spirit, as the settlers themselves wanted something to support their strength in the extraordinary and unusual heat of the climate, and the dampness of it in several places disposing them to agues and severs. But, what was worse, this prohibition in a manner deprived them of the only vent they had for the only commodities they could send to market, lumber and corn, which could sell no where but in the sugar islands, and, with this restriction of Negroes and rum, they could take very little from them in return.

CHAP. XXVI.

Colony new modelled. Faults in the new constitution. Trade of this province.

LL these and several other inconveniencies, in the plan of the settlement, raised a general discontent in the inhabitants; they quarrelled with one another and with their magistrates; they complained; they remonstrated; and, finding no satisfaction, many of them sled out of Georgia, and dispersed themselves where they deemed the encouragement better, to all the other colonies. So that of above two thousand people, who had transported themselves from Europe, in a little time not about six or seven hundred were to

be

270 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

be found in Georgia; so far were they from increasing. The mischief grew worse and worse every day, until the government revoked the grant to the trustees, took the province into their own hands, and annulled all the particular regulations that were made. It was then left exactly on the same footing with Carolina.

Though this step has probably faved the colony from entire ruin, yet it was not perhaps so well done to neglect entirely the first views upon which it was fettled. These were undoubtedly judicious; and, if the methods taken to compass them were not so well directed, it was no argument against the defigns themselves, but a reason for some change in the instruments designed to put them in execution. Certainly nothing wants a regulation more, than the dangerous inequality in the number of Negroes and Whites in fuch of our provinces where the former are used. South Carolina, in spite of its great wealth, is really in a more defenceless condition, than a knot of poor townships on the frontiers of New England. In Georgia, the first error of absolutely prohibiting the use of Negroes, might be turned to very good account; for they would have received the permission to employ them under what qualifications foever, not as a restriction, but as a favour and indulgence; and by executing whatever regulations we should make in this

27 I

ls ıs

ie ٦.

1 -

or

ł. i --

to

er n, t-

in is

this point with strictness, by degrees we might fee a province fit to answer all the ends of defence and traffic too; whereas we have let them use such a latitude in that affair, which we were so earnest to prevent, that Georgia, instead of being any defence to Carolina, does actually stand in need of a considerable force to defend itself.

As for the scheme of vines and filk, we were extremely eager in this respect in the beginning; and very supine ever since. that time fuch a defign was clearly impracticable; because a few people seated in a wild country must first provide every thing for the support of life, by raising corn and breeding cattle, before they can think of manufactures of any kind; and they must grow numerous enough to spare a number of hands from that most necessary employment, before they can fend fuch things in any degree of cheapness or plenty to a good market. But now there is little faid of either of these articles, though the province is longer fettled and grown more populous. But the misfortune is, that, though no people upon earth originally conceive things better than the English do, they want the unremitting perseverance which is necessary to bring designs of consequence to perfection. We are apt fuddenly to change our measures upon any failure; without fusficiently considering whether the failure

272 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

failure has been owing to a fault in the scheme itself; this does not arise from any defect peculiar to our people, for it is the fault of mankind in general, if left to themselves. What is done by us is generally done by the spirit of the people; as far as that can go we advance, but no further. We want political regulations, and a steady plan in government, to remedy the defects that must be in all things, which depend merely on the character and disposition

of the people.

At present, Georgia is beginning to emerge, though flowly, out of the difficulties that attended its first establishment. It is still but indifferently peopled, though it is now twentyfix years fince its first settlement. Not one of our colonies was of so slow a growth, though none had so much of the attention of the government or of the people in general, or raised so great expectations in the beginning. They export some corn and lumber to the West-Indies; they raise some rice, and of late are going with fuccess into indigo. It is not to be doubted but in time, when their internal divisions are a little better composed, the remaining errors in the government corrected, and the people begin to multiply, they will become a useful province.

Georgia has two towns already known in trade; Savannah the capital, which stands very well for business about ten miles from the sea,

updn

SETTLEMENTS in AMERICA. upon a noble river of the fame name, which is navigable two hundred miles further for large boats, to the second town, called Augusta; this stands upon a spot of ground of the greatest fertility, and is so commodiously situated for the Indian trade, that, from the first establishment of the colony, it has been in a very flourishing condition, and maintained very early fix hundred Whites in that trade alone. The Indian nations on their borders are the upper and lower Creeks, the Chickefaws, and the Cherokees; who are some of the most numerous and powerful tribes in America. trade of skins with this people is the largest we have; it takes in that of Georgia, the two Carolinas and Virginia. We deal with them fomewhat in furs likewise, but they are of an inferior fort. All species of animals, that bear the fur, by a wife providence, have it more thick, and of a fofter and finer kind, as you go to the Northward; the greater the cold, the better they are clad.

n

e

h

or

te ot

1d,

ry

in

y

'n

CHAP. XXVII.

Nova Scotia, the time and reasons of its settlement. French there. Climate and soil. Annapolis, Halifax, and Lunenburg.

THE last province we have settled, or rather began to settle, upon the continent of North America, is Nova Scotia. Vol. II.

274 An Account of the European

This vast province, called by the French Acadie, has New England and the Atlantic ocean to the South and South-West, and the river and gulph of St. Laurence to the North and North-East. It lies between the 44th and 50th degrees of North latitude, and, though in a very favourable part of the temperate zone, has a winter of an almost insupportable length and coldness, continuing at least seven months in the year; to this immediately fucceeds, without the intervention of any thing that may be called fpring, a fummer of an heat as violent as the cold, though of no long continuance; and they are wrapt in the gloom of a perpetual fog, even long after the fummer feafon has commenced. most parts, the soil is thin and barren, the corn it produces of a shrivelled kind like rye, and the grass intermixed with a cold spungy moss. However, it is not uniformly bad; there are tracts in Nova Scotia, which do not yield to the best land in New England.

Unpromising as this country is, yet, neglecting all those delightful tracts to the Southward, it was here that some of the first European settlements were made. The French seated themselves here before they made any establishment in Canada; but whatever unaccountable ignorance influenced their choice, the industry and vigour of that time deserve our applause; for, though they had infinitely more difficulties

ic

he

th

th

id.

71-

p-

at

11-

of

ıer

gh

ipt

ıf-

In

he

ye,

gy ere

eld

ct-

rd,

an

ted

ta-

nt-

he

bur

bre

ies

difficulties to struggle with than we have at this day, and not the hundredth part of the fuccours from Europe, yet they sublisted in a tolerable manner, and increased largely; when the colony which in our days we have fixed there, if the support of the royal hand was withdrawn but for a moment, after all the immense sums which have been expended in its establishment, would undoubtedly sink into. nothing. It is with difficulty it subsists, even encouraged and supported as it is. Yet the defign of establishing a colony here, with whatever difficulties it might have been attended, was a very prudent measure; for the French would undoubtedly have profited of our neglects, and have by some means got this country into their hands, to the great annovance of all our colonies, and to the great benefit both of their fishery and their sugar islands.

This country has frequently changed hands from one private proprietor to the other, and from the French to the English nation, backward and forward; until the treaty of Utrecht established our right in it finally; as the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle confirmed it. But both were deficient in not ascertaining distinctly what bounds this province ought to have. This was left to be adjusted by commissaries. Whilst they were debating, the French built forts, and secured such a part of the province

276 An Account of the European

as they were refolved to hold. I have not, throughout this work, chosen to enter into territorial disputes, because they convey very little private instruction, and do nothing at all towards the establishment of the public rights; yet it is difficult to avoid remarking, that the line which the French have drawn in Nova Scotia is not only not drawn by any treaty, but that it is very apparently calculated to secure them those parts of the province which they value most, and, at the same time, to pay an apparent respect to the treaty of Utrecht by

leaving us some part of Acadia.

The chief town we had formerly in this province, was called Annapolis Royal; but, though the capital, it was a small place, wretchedly fortified, and yet worse built and inhabited. Here were stationed the remains of a regiment, which continued there, very little recruited, since the reign of queen Anne; but though this place never flourished, it stood upon the very best harbour, as it is said, in North America; but it was not here, but on the South-East side of the peninsula, that the fettlement, resolved and executed with so much spirit at the end of the last war, was established. This too stands upon a fine harbour, very commodiously situated, and rather better than Annapolis for the fishery. The town is called Halifax from the present earl, to whose wisdom and care we owe this settlement.

1743, three thousand families, at an immense charge to the government, were transported into this country at once, and (I think) three regiments stationed there to protect them from the Indians, who have always shewed themselves our most implacable enemies. The town is large, and, for so new a settlement, well built. It has a good intrenchment of timber, strengthened with forts of the same materials, so as to be in little danger at least

from an Indian enemy.

ot,

to

ry

all

ts;

he

va

ty,

to

.ch

ay

by

ut,

ce,

nd

ins

ery

ne;

od

in

on

he

ch

ta-

ur,

ter

is

ofe -

In 43*

Though this town of Halifax has, all things confidered, a tolerable appearance, the adjacent country is not improved in proportion; the ground is very hard to be cleared; when cleared does not produce a great deal, and labour is extravagantly dear. But this colony has fuffered more from the incursions of the Indians than from any thing else. Their incursions have been so frequent, and attended with fuch cruelties, that the people can hardly extend themselves beyond the cannon of the fort, nor attend their works of agriculture even there without the greatest danger. consequence of this is, that they do not raise the fifth part of what is sufficient to maintain them. Most of their provision of every fort comes from New England, and they must have starved if it were not for the fishery, which it must be owned is not contemptible, and for some little naval stores, and the pay

278 An Account of the European

of the garrison, the spending of which here is the principal use of the troops; against the Indian enemy they are of very little effect; though there are three regiments, and all the fighting men the Indians can raise in that province are not five hundred. The foldiers, inactive by their confinement in their barracks, diseased for the most part with the scurvy, and debilitated by the use of spirituous liquors, are quite an undermatch for the activity, vigilance, patience, and address of the American. A company of wood rangers kept constantly to fcour the country near our fettlements, and a small body of Indians who might be brought at an easy rate from the friendly tribes who inhabit our other settlements, and encouraged by a reward for what scalps they should bring home, sent to infest the enemy amongst their own habitations, would have protected our colony, and long ago exterminated the Indians, or reduced them to an useful subjection, fince unfortunately we have not the fecret of gaining their affections. The easy plan I have mentioned would not have had half the expence attending it, that the maintainance of a numerous and almost useless garrison has had. little experience will shew to the most ordinary understandings, what hardly any sagacity could have without it unveiled to the most penetrating statesman. It was a want of this experience that caused another mistake of almost

re

ι,

ıe

) **-**

1-

8,

y,

i-

n. lý

١d

Ò

ed

ıg

ir

ur

S,

ì-

ce r-

À

iy(t

most as bad a nature. Until the beginning of this war, a number of the ancient French colony, some say ten or twelve thousand souls, remained in the country, and were called and treated in a manner as a neutral people, though they ought to have been the king's subjects; but they yielded very little obedience to the crown of England, as in truth they had from us very little protection; and they were even accused of encouraging the Indian incursions, and fupplying them with arms and ammunition to annoy our people. Had we erected in their country a little fort, and in it kept a small garrison, to be maintained by that people themselves, appointed magistrates, and made them know the benefit and excellency of the British laws, and, at the same time, impressed them, with a dread of the British power, we might have faved many useful people to this colony, and prevented the necessity (if it was .a necessity) of using measures, which, if they are not impolitic, are certainly fuch as an humane and generous mind is never constrained to but with regret.

Besides Annapolis and Halifax, we have another settlement a little to the South-West of the latter, called Lunenburg. This is a branch of Germans from Halifax, who, being discontented at the infertility of the soil there, desired to go where there was better land to be had, undertaking their own desence; ac-

T 4

cordingly

280 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

cordingly they settled where they desired, to the number of seven or eight hundred, and succeed tolerably well. Upon a tumult which arose amongst them, the governor sent a party of soldiers to protect them from their own discords, and from the enemy. This province is yet but in its beginning; and therefore, except in prospect, can afford us no great subject matter of speculation.

C H A P. XXVIII.

The island of Newfoundland. The sistery there. The Bermudas. Their settlement and trade. The Bahamas.

is of Newfoundland, above three hundred miles long, and two hundred broad, extending quite up to New Britain, and forming the Eastern boundary of the gulf of St. Laurence. This island, after various disputes about the property, was entirely ceded to England by the treaty of Utrecht. From the soil of this island we were far from reaping any sudden or great advantage; for the cold is long continued and intense; and the summer heat, though violent, warms it not enough to produce any thing valuable; for the soil, at least in those parts of the island with which we are acquainted (for we are far from know-

 $^{\mathrm{id}}$

ty

'n

ce

X-

e.

le.

n-

X∽

ng

St.

tes

to

he

ng

 ld

n-

gh il,

ch

ν-

1g

ing the whole), is rocky and barren. However, it hath many large and fafe harbours; and several good rivers water it. This island, whenever the continent shall come to fail of timber convenient to navigation (which perhaps is no very remote prospect), will afford a copious supply for masts, yards, and all forts of lumber, for the West-India trade. But what at present it is chiefly valuable for, is the great fishery of cod, which is carried on upon those shoals which are called the Banks of Newfoundland. In that the French and Spaniards, especially the former, have a large share. Our share of this fishery is computed to increase the national stock by three hundred thousand a year, in gold and filver, remitted us for the cod we fell in the North, in Spain, Portugal, Italy, and the Levant. The plenty of cod, both on the great bank and the lesser ones which lie to the East and South-East of this island, is inconceivable; and not only cod, but several other species of fish are there in abundance; all these species are nearly in an equal plenty all along the shores of New England, Nova Scotia, and the isle of Cape Breton; and consequently excellent fisheries are carried on upon all their coasts. Where our American colonies are so ill peopled or so barren as not to produce any thing from their foil, their coasts make us ample amends; and pour in upon us a wealth of

another

282 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN another kind, and no way inferior to the for-

mer, from their fisheries.

We have in North America, besides this, two clusters of islands; the Bermudas or Summer islands, at a vast distance from the continent in lat. 31. and the Bahama islands. The former were very early settled, and were much celebrated in the time of the civil wars; when, several of the cavalier party being obliged to retire into America, some of them, in particular Mr. Waller, the poet, spent some time in this island. Waller was extremely enamoured with the serenity of the air, and the beauty and richness of the vegetable productions of these islands; he celebrated them in a poem, which is sine but unequal, written by him upon this subject.

The Bermudas are but small; not containing in all upwards of twenty thousand acres. They are very difficult of access, being, as Waller expresses it, walled with rocks. What has been said of the clearness and serenity of the air, and of the healthiness of the climate, was not exaggerated; but the soil could never boast of an extraordinary fertility. Their best production was cedar, which was superior to any thing of the kind in America. It is still so, though diminished considerably in quantity, which has, as it is imagined, changed the air much for the worse; for now it is much

much more inconstant than formerly; and feveral tender vegetables, which flourished here at the first settlement, being deprived of their shelter and exposed to the bleak North-

erly winds, are feen no more.

14

is,

or he

is.

re

S;

 ed

r-

ne

n-

he

C-

in

Эy

n-

s.

as

at of

e, er

ir

e-It

n

d

h

The chief and indeed only business of these islanders is the building and navigating of light floops and brigantines, built with their cedar, which they employ chiefly in the trade between North America and the West-Indies. These vessels are as remarkable for their swiftness, as the wood of which they are built is for its hard and durable quality. They export nothing from themselves but some white stone to the West-Indies and some of their garden productions. To England they fend nothing. Formerly they made a good deal of money of a fort of hats for women's wear of the leaves of their palmetto's, which, whilst the fashion, lasted were elegant; but the trade and the fashion are gone together.

Their Whites are computed to be about five thousand, the Blacks which they breed are the best in America, and as useful as the Whites in their navigation. The people of the Bermudas are poor but healthy, contented and remarkably chearful. It is extremely surprising that they do not set themselves heartily to the cultivation of vines in this island, to which their rocky soil seems admirably adapted; and their situation and the manner of trade they

284 An Account of the European

they are already engaged in, would facilitate the distribution of their wine to every part of

North America and the West-Indies.

The Bahamas are fituated to the South of Carolina, from lat. 22 to 27. and they extend along the coast of Florida quite down to the Isle of Cuba; and are said to be five hundred in number; some of them only mere rocks; but a great many others large, fertile, and in nothing differing from the soil of Carolina. All are however absolutely uninhabited, except Providence, which is neither the largest nor the most fertile.

This island was formerly a receptacle for the pirates, who, for a long time, infested the American navigation. This obliged the government to erect a fort there, to station an independent company in the island, and to send thither a governor. This island has at present not much trade, some oranges it sends to North America excepted. However, in time of war, it makes considerably by the prizes condemned here; and, in time of peace, by the wrecks, which are frequent in this labyrinth of innumerable rocks and shelves.

This is all the benefit we derive from fo many large and fertile islands, fituated in such a climate as will produce any thing, and which, as it is never reached by any trosts, would yield in all probability even sugars of as good a fort, and in as great abundance, as any islands

an to at

ds in he

fo ch

od ds in in the West-Indies. Nothing more fully shews the present want of that spirit of adventure and enterprize, which was so common in the two last centuries, and which is of such infinite honour and advantage to any time or nation, than that these islands so situated can lie unoccupied, whilst we complain of the want of land proper for fugar, and whilst an hundred pounds an acre is sometimes paid for fuch in the Caribbees. This point, to any who will be at the pains of studying the situation of these islands, and the consequences which may refult from the improvement or neglect of them, will appear of no finall importance: and perhaps an enquiry into the causes of the strange degree of backwardness in which they are at present, may be a very prudent and perhaps a necessary measure.

CHAP. XXIX.

Hudson's Bay. Attempts for the discovery of a North-West passage. The Hudson's bay company. Thoughts upon its trade. Climate and soil of the countries there. Conclusion.

HE countries about Hudson's and Bassin's Bay make the last object of our speculation in America. The knowledge of these seas was owing to a project for the discovery of a North-West passage to China.

So early as the year 1576 this noble defigit was conceived; fince then, it has been frequently dropped; it has often been revived; it is not yet compleated; but was never despaired of by those whose knowledge and spirit make them competent judges and lovers of such undertakings. Frobisher only discovered the main of New Britain, or Terra de Labrador, and those straits to which he has given his name. In 1585, John David sailed from Dartmouth, and viewed that and the more Northerly coasts; but he seems never to

have entered the bay.

Hudson made three voyages on the same adventure, the first in 1607, the second in 1608, and his third and last in 1610. This bold and judicious navigator entered the straits that lead into this new Mediterranean. coasted a great part of it, and penetrated to eighty degrees twenty-three minutes into the heart of the frozen zone. His ardor for the difcovery not being abated by the difficulties he struggled with in this empire of winter and world of frost and snow, he staid here until the ensuing spring, and prepared in the beginning of 1611 to pursue his discoveries; but his crew, who suffered equal hardships without the same spirit to support them, mutinized, seized upon him and seven of those who were most faithful to him, and committed them to the fury of the seas in an open open boat. Hudson and his companions were either swallowed up by the waves, or, gaining the inhospitable coast which they water, were destroyed by the savages; but his sate so calamitous cannot so much discourage a generous mind from such undertakings, as the immortality of his name, which he has secured by having given it to so great a sea, will be a spur to others to expect an equal honour, and perhaps with better success.

3-4

it

of

) -

de

as

be

ne

to

ne

in

is

he

n,

to

he

if-

ne

hď

til

e⊸

,

DS.

1-

fe

1'--

in en From the first voyage of Frobisher an hundred and ten years ago, to that of captain Ellis, notwithstanding so many disappointments, the rational hopes of this grand discovery have grown greater by every attempt, and seem to spring even out of our very failures. The greater swell of the tides in the inner part of the bay than near the straits, an appearance so unknown in any other inland seas, and the increase of this swell with Westerly winds, seem, without any other arguments, to evince the certain existence of such a passage as we have so long sought without success.

But though we have hitherto failed in the original purpose for which we navigated this bay, yet such great designs even in their failures bestow a sufficient reward for whatever has been expended upon them. In 1670, the charter was granted to a company for the exclusive trade to this bay, and they

have acted under it ever fince with great benefit to the private men who compose the company, though comparatively with little advantage to Great Britain. It is true, that their trade in beavers and other species of furs is not inconsiderable, and it is a trade in itself of the best kind; its object enters largely into our manufactures, and carries nothing but our manufactures from us to procure it; and thus it has the qualities of the most advantageous kinds of traffic. The company has besides pretty large returns in beaver and deer skins. It is faid that the dividends of this company are prodigious; far exceeding what is gained in any of the other great trading bodies; yet their capital is small, they seem little inclined to enlarge their bottom, and appear strongly possessed with that spirit of jealousy that prevails in some degree in all knots and societies of men endued with peculiar privileges. The officers of the company have behaved to those who wintered within their jurisdiction in fearch of the North-West passage (one of the purposes for which the company itself was originally instituted) in such a manner as to give us the truest idea of this spirit. If I had been fingular in this opinion, I should have expressed my sentiments with much greater diffidence; but this abuse has been often and loudly complained of. It would appear aftonishing that this trade has not hitherto been laid

a

1)

O

b

V

laid open, if, in the perplexing multiplicity of affairs that engages our ministry, something

must not necessarily pass unredressed.

at

rs

lf

to

ur

us

us

es

ıs.

ny

ed

/et

ed

ly

re-

ies

he

ble

in

he

vas

to

ad

ve

ter

nd

to-

en

The vast countries which surround this Bay all abound with animals, whose fur is excellent, and fome of kinds which are not yet brought into commerce; and the company is very far from any attempt to stretch this trade to its full extent. If the trade were laid open, it seems of necessity that three capital advantages would ensue: first, that the trade going into a number of rival hands, with a more moderate profit to individuals, would confume a much greater quantity of our manufactures, employ more of our shipping and seamen, and of course bring home more furs; and, by lowering the price of that commodity at home, increase the demand of those manufactures into which they enter at the foreign markets: it might bring home other species of furs than those we deal in at present, and thus open new channels of trade, which in commerce is a matter of great confideration. Secondly, this more general intercourse would make the country better known; it would habituate great numbers of our people to it; it would discover the most tolerable parts for a fettlement; and thus, instead of a miserable fort or two, time might shew an English colony at Hudson's Bay, which would open the fur trade yet more fully, and increase the vent of our manufactures yet further. Thirdly, Vol. II.

290 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN

this more general trade on the Bay would naturally, without any new expence or trouble whatsoever, in a very short space of time, discover to us the so much desired North-West passage, or shew us clearly and definitely that we cught to expect no such thing. These advantages, and even yet more considerable ones, would be derived from laying open this trade, under such proper regulations as the nature of the object would point out of itself.

No colony has been hitherto attempted at Hudson's Bay. The Company has two inconfiderable forts there. The country is every where barren; to the Northward of the bay even the hardy sine tree is feen no longer, and the cold womb of the earth is incapable of any better production than some miserable The winter reigns with an inconshrubs. ceivable rigour for near nine months of the year; the other three are violently hot, except when the North-West wind renews the memory of the winter. Every kind of European feed, which we have committed to the earth in this inhospitable climate, has hitherto perished; but, in all probability, we have not tried the feed of corn from the Northern parts of Sweden and Norway; in fuch cases, the place from whence the seed comes is of great moment. All this feverity and long continuance of winter, and the barrenness of the earth which arises from thence, is experienced.

le

iſ-

eſŧ

ely

efe ole

nis he

of

at

nery

er,

ole

ole

11 -

he

x-

he

u-

to ni-

we

1-

 ch

es

ng

ot

e-

d,

rienced, in the latitude of 51; in the temperate latitude of Cambridge. However, it is far from increasing uniformly as you go Northwards. Captain James wintered in Charlton island, in latitude 51; he judged that the climate here was to be deemed utterly uninhabitable on account of the surprising hardships which he suffered; yet the company has a fort several degrees more to the Northward, where their servants make a shift to subsist tolerably. It is called Fort Nelson, and is in the latitude 54.

All the animals of these countries are cloathed with a close, soft, warm fur. In summer there is here, as in other places, a variety in the colours of the feveral animals; when that is over, they all assume the livery of winter, and every fort of beafts, and most of their fowls, are of the colour of the fnow; every thing animate and inanimate is white. This is a surprising phænomenon. But what is jet more furprifing, and what is indeed one of those striking things that draw the most inattentive to an admiration of the wisdom and goodness of Providence, is, that the dogs and cats from England, that have been carried into Hudson's Bay, on the approach of winter have intirely changed their appearance, and acquired a much longer, fofter, and thicker coat of hair than they had originally. As for the men of the country, Providence there, as every where else, has given them no provifion but their own art and ingenuity, and they shew a great deal in their manner of kindling a fire, in cloathing themselves, and in preserving their eyes from the ill effects of that glaring white which every where surrounds them for the greatest part of the year; in other respects they are very savage. In their shapes and faces, they do not resemble the Americans who live to the Southward; they are much more like the Laplanders and Samoeids of Europe, from whom they are probably descended. The other Americans seem to be of

a Tartar original.

I have now finished upon my plan the survey of the English colonies in America. I flatter myself that so full an idea has not been given of them before in to narrow a compass. this the reader will himfelf be enabled to judge, for it is not my defign to pre-occupy his judgment in these particulars, how our colonies have grown, what their vegetative principle has been, in what vigour it subsists, or what figns of corruption appear in any of them; how far we have purfued the advantages which our fituation and the nature of the country have given us; or, where we have purfued them, whether we have gone to the ultimate point. He will see how far the colonies have ferved the trade of the mother country, and how much the mother country has done or neglected to do towards their happiness and prosperity. Certainly our colonies deserve,

The barbarism of our ancestors could not comprehend how a nation could grow more populous by fending out a part of its people. We have lived to see this paradox made out

by

293

e, $^{\mathrm{hd}}$

of in at ds

ıd

er es ire

ds e-

ey er en

By e, es

le at

ch '

 ed te ve

 \mathbf{d} or

hd

by experience, but we have not sufficiently profited of this experience; fince we begin, some of us at least, to think that there is a danger of dispeopling ourselves by encouraging new colonies, or increasing the old. our colonies find, as hitherto they have constantly done, employment for a great number of hands, there is no danger but that hands will be found for the employment. That a rich, trading, and manufacturing nation should be long in want of people, is a most absurd supposition; for besides that the people within themselves multiply the most where the means of subsistence are most certain, it is as natural for people to flock into a bufy and wealthy country, that by any accident may be thin of people, as it is for the dense air to rush into those parts where it is rarified. He must be a great stranger to this country, who does not observe in it a vast number of people, whose removal from hence, if they could be of any use elsewhere, would prove of very little detriment to the public.

I have already observed, that the trade of our colonies deserves a more particular attention than any other, not only on account of the advantages I have just mentioned, but because our attention is sure of being sufficiently rewarded. The object is in our own power; it is of a good kind; and of such extent and variety, as to employ nobly the most invent-

n,

1-

er

ds

 ld

rd in

ns

al

1y

ot

to

pe

oț le y

of of y d

e

ive genius in those matters. Foreign politics have fomething more splendid and entertaining than domestic prudence; but this latter is ever attended, though with less glaring, yet with infinitely more folid, secure, and lasting advantages. The great point of our regard in America ought therefore to be, the effectual peopling, employment, and strength of our possessions there; in a subordinate degree, the management of our interests with regard to the French and Spaniards. The latter we have reason to respect, to indulge, and even perhaps to endure; and more, it is probable, may be had from them in that way than by the violent methods which some have fo warmly recommended, and still urge, tho' we have had some experience to convince us of their infufficiency. But the nature of the French, their fituation, their defigns, every thing has shewn that we ought to use every method to repress them, to prevent them from extending their territories, their trade, or their influence, and above all to connive at not the least encroachment; but this in such a manner as not to strain our own strength, or turn our eyes from ferving ourselves by attempts to diffress them. But as we are now in the midst of a war, until that is decided, it will be impossible to fay any thing satisfactory on our connexions with French America, until we U 4

296 An ACCOUNT of the EUROPEAN fee what the next treaty of peace will do in the distribution of the territory of the two nations there.

CHAP. XXX.

The royal, proprietary, and charter governments. Laws of the colonies. Paper currency. Abuses in it. Another sort of money proposed.

HE settlement of our colonies was never pursued upon any regular plan; but they were formed, grew, and flourished, as accidents, the nature of the climate, or the dispositions of private men, happened to operate. We ought not therefore to be surprised to find, in the several constitutions and governments of our colonies, so little of any thing like uniformity. It has been faid that there is fearce any form of government known, that does not prevail in some of our plantations; the variety is certainly great and vicious; but the latitude of the observation must be somewhat restrained; for some forms they are certainly strangers to. To passover several, nothing like a pure hereditary aristocracy has ever appeared in any of them.

The first colony which we settled, was that of Virginia. It was governed for some time by a president and a council, appointed by the

crown;

in

ned neng is is

s; ut e-

ng p-

at ne ne crown; but when the people were increased to a confiderable body, it was not thought reasonable to leave them longer under a mode of government so averse from that which they had enjoyed at home. They were therefore empowered to elect representatives for the feveral counties into which this province is divided, with privileges resembling those of the representatives of the commons in England. The persons so elected form what is called the lower house of assembly. This was added to the council which still subsisted, and the members of which were, and to this day are, nominated by the crown, as at the first; and they are not only nominated by the crown but hold their feats during the king's pleasure, as fignified by his governor. They are stiled honourable, and are chosen from the persons of the best fortunes and most considerable influence in the country. They form another branch of the legislature, and are sometimes called the upper house of assembly. They answer in some measure to the house of peers in our constitution. As the lower house of assembly is the guardian of the people's privileges, the council is appointed chiefly to preferve the prerogative of the crown, and to fecure the dependence of the colony; it is the more effectually to answer these ends, that the members of the council only are appointed during pleasure.

When

When any bill has passed the two houses, it comes before the governor, who represents the king, and gives his affent or negative, as he thinks proper. It now acquires the force of a law, but it must be afterwards transmitted to the king and council in England, where it may still receive a negative that takes away all its effect. The upper house of assembly not only forms a part of the legislature of the colony, but it acts as a privy council to the governor, without whose concurrence he can do nothing of moment; it fometimes acts as a court of chancery. This is the common form of government, and the best too that is in use in the plantations. This is the manner of government in all the islands of the West-Indies; in Nova Scotia; in one province of New England, and, with fome restriction, in another; in New York, New Jersey, Virginia, the two Carolinas, and Georgia. This form is commonly called a royal government.

The second form in use in our settlements in America is called a proprietary government. At our first planting that part of the world, it was not difficult for a person who had interest at court, to obtain large tracts of land, not inserior in extent to many kingdoms; and to be invested with a power very little less than regal over them; to govern by what laws, and to form what sort of constitution, he pleased. A dependence upon the crown of England

England was shewn only by the payment of an Indian arrow, a few skins, or some other trifling acknowledgment of the fame nature. We had formerly many more governments of that fort, than we have at present; in the West-Indies, the island of Barbadoes was granted to the earl of Carlifle; and we have feen a like grant made of the island of St. Lucia to the duke of Montague in this age, which, after an infinite charge to that benevolent nobleman, came to nothing, by a fort of tacit allowance of the French claim to it. This was in 1722, when our connextion with France hindered us from exerting our rights with the necessary vigour. Carolina was formerly a government of this kind, but it was lodged in eight proprietaries. How they parted with their rights we have feen already. New Jersey was likewise a proprietary government; but this too failed like the others. The only governments in this form which remain at present, but considerably abridged of their privileges, are Pennsilvania and Mary-In the latter, the constitution exactly resembles that of the royal governments; a governor, council, and affembly of the repretentatives of the people; but the governor is appointed by the proprietary, and approved by The customs are reserved to the crown likewise; and the officers belonging to them are independent of the government of the

the province. In Pennsylvania, the proprietary is under the same restrictions that limit the proprietary of Maryland, on the side of the crown; on the side of the people, he is yet more restrained; for their legislature has but two parts, the assembly of the people and the governor; so that the governor, wanting the great influence which the council gives in other places, whenever his sentiments differ from those of the assembly, is engaged in

a very unequal contest.

The third form is called a charter government; this originally prevailed in all the provinces of New England; and still remains in two of them, Connecticut and Rhode Island. By the charters to these colonies, the exorbitant power, which was given in the proprietary governments to fingle men, was here vested, and I apprehend much more dangerously, in the whole body of the people. It is to all purposes a mere democracy. They elect every one of their own officers, from the highest to the lowest; they displace them at pleasure; and the laws which they enact, are valid This state of without the royal approbation. unbounded freedom, I believe, contributed in some degree to make those settlements flourish; but it certainly contributed as much to render their value to their mother country far more precarious, than a better digested plan would have done that might have taken in the

cording to the present and best ideas of them, can or ought to be. The charter govern-

ments

ne ne

et

ıt

1e

10

in

er

n

;-/,

ments had nothing of this in view, and consequently provided for it but very indiffe-

rently.

The province of Massachusets Bay, which is partly a government of this popular kind, but tempered with fomething more of the royal authority, feems to be on still a worse footing, through the one error of having no established provision for the governor; this one mischief is productive of a thousand others, because the governor in a manner is obliged to keep intrigues and devices on foot, to reconcile the various parts which he must act, and is necessitated to govern by faction and cabal. Hence it is that the charges of this one government are greater than those not only of the other provinces of New England taken together, but of those of Pennsylvania and New York added them; they are deeply in debt, they are every day plunging deeper, their taxes increase, and their trade declines.

It has been an old complaint, that it is not easy to bring American governors to justice for mismanagements in their province, or to make them refund to the injured people the wealth raised by their extortions. Against such governors at present there are three kinds of remedy; the privy council, the king's bench, and the parliament. The council, on just cause of complaint, may remove the governor; the power of the council seems to extend no sur-

ther.

n÷

e-

ch

d,

he

fe

10

ne

3,

to

le

is

ıl.

) **-** ·

of

n

t,

es

ot or

h

h

f

ther. The king's bench may punish the governors for their offences committed in America, as if done in England. The power of parliament is unlimited in the ways of enquiry into the crime, or of punishing it. The first of these remedies can never be sufficient to terrify a governor grown rich by iniquity, and willing to retire quietly, though dishonourably, to enjoy the fruits of it. The king's bench, or any other merely law court, feems equally insufficient for this purpose; because offences in government, though very grievous, can hardly ever be so accurately defined as to be a proper object of any court of justice, bound up by forms and the rigid letter of the law. The parliament is equal to every thing; but whether party, and other bars to a quick and effectual proceeding, may not here leave the provinces as much unredressed as in the other courts, I shall not take upon me to determine.

The law in all our provinces, besides those acts which from time to time they have made for themselves, is the common law of England, the old statute law, and a great part of the new, which in looking over their laws I find many of our settlements have adopted, with very little choice or discretion. And indeed the laws of England, if in the long period of their duration they have had many improvements, so they have grown more tedious, perplexed, and intricate, by the heap-

ing

ing up many abuses in one age, and the attempts to remove them in another. These infant settlements surely demanded a more fimple, clear, and determinate legislation, though it were of somewhat an homelier kind; laws fuited to the time, to their country, and the nature of their new way of life. Many things still subsist in the law of England, which are built upon causes and reasons that have long ago ceased; many things are in those laws suitable to England only. But the whole weight of this ill-agreeing mass, which neither we nor our fathers were well able to bear, is laid upon the shoulders of these colonies, by which a spirit of contention is raised, and arms offensive and defensive are supplied, to keep up and exercise this spirit, by the intricacy and unsuitableness of the laws to their object. And thus, in many of our settlements, the lawyers have gathered to themselves the greatest part of the wealth of the country; men of less use in such establishments than in more fettled countries, where the number of people naturally fets many apart from the occupations of husbandry, arts, or commerce. Certainly our American brethren might well have carried with them the privileges which make the glory and happiness of Englishmen, without taking them encumbered with all that load of matter, perhaps so useless at home, without doubt so extremely prejudicial in the colonies. Laws

Laws themselves are hardly more the cement of focieties than money; and focieties flourish or decay according to the condition of either of these. It may be easily judged, as the balance of trade with Great Britain is very much against the colonies, that therefore whatever gold or filver they may receive from the other branches of their commerce, makes but a short stay in America. This consideration at first view would lead one to conclude, that in a little time money for their ordinary circulation would be wanting; and this is apparently confirmed by experience. Very little money is feen amongst them, notwithstanding the vast increase of their trade. This deficiency is supplied, or, more properly speaking, it is caused, by the use of money of credit, which they commonly call paper currency. This money is not created for the conveniency of traffic, but by the exigencies of the government, and often by the frauds and artifices of private men for their particular profit. Before this invention, money was indeed scarce enough in America; but they raised its value, and it ferved their purpose tolerably. I shall forbear entering into the causes that increased the charges of government fo greatly in all our American provinces. But the execution of projects too vast for their strength made large sums necessary. The feeble state of a colony which had hardly taken root in the country could Yol. II.

r

,

e

not bear them; and to raise sudden and heavy taxes, would destroy the province without anfwering their purpose. Credit then came in aid of money, and the government issued bills to the amount of what they wanted, to pass current in all payments; and they commonly laid a tax, or found some persons willing to engage their lands as fecurity, for gradually finking this debt, and calling in these bills. But before the time arrived at which these taxes were to answer their end, new exigencies made new emissions of paper currency necestary; and thus things went from debt to debt, until it became very visible that no taxes which could be imposed could discharge them; and that the land securities given were often fraudulent, and almost always insufficient. Then the paper currency became no longer to be weighed against the credit of the government, which depended upon its visible revenue. It was compared to the trade, to which it was found to disproportionate, that the bills fell ten, twenty, fifty, and eighty per cent in some places. It was to no purpose that the government used every method to keep up their credit, and even to compel the receiving of these bills at the value for which they were emitted, and to give no preference over them to gold and filver; they were more and more depreciated every day; whilst the government every day emitted more paper, and grew

grew less folicitous about their old bills, being entirely exhausted to find means of giving credit to the new.

in

ſs

ly

to

ly

s.

ſe

es

ſ-

t,

1;

n

t.

e-

to

at er

at

р -

d

d

It is easy to perceive how much the intercourse of business must suffer by this uncertainty in the value of money, when a man receives that in payment this day for ten shillings, which to-morrow he will not find received from him for five, or perhaps for three. Real money can hardly ever multiply too much in any country, because it will always as it increases be the certain fign of the increase of trade, of which it is the measure, and consequently of the foundness and vigour of the whole body. But this paper money may, and does increase, without any increase of trade, nay often when it greatly declines, for it is not the measure of the trade of the nation, but of the necessity of its government; and it is abfurd, and must be ruinous, that the same cause which naturally exhausts the wealth of a nation, should likewise be the only productive cause of money.

The currency of our plantations must not be set upon a level with the funds in England. For besides that the currency carries no interest to make some amends for the badness of the security; the security itself is so rotten, that no art can give it any lasting credit; as there are parts of New England wherein, if the whole stock and the people along with it

were

were fold, they would not bring money enough to take in all the bills which have been emitted.

I hope it is not too late to contrive some remedy for this evil, as those at the head of affairs here are undoubtedly very sollicitous about so material a grievance. I should imagine that one current coin for the whole continent might be struck here, or there, with such an alloy as might at once leave it of some real value, and yet so debased as to prevent its currency elsewhere, and so to keep it within themselves. This expedient has been practised, and with success, in several parts of Europe; but particularly in Holland, a country which undoubtedly is perfectly acquainted with its commercial interest.

FINIS,

ney lave

ome of ous naonith me ent it een of ned

